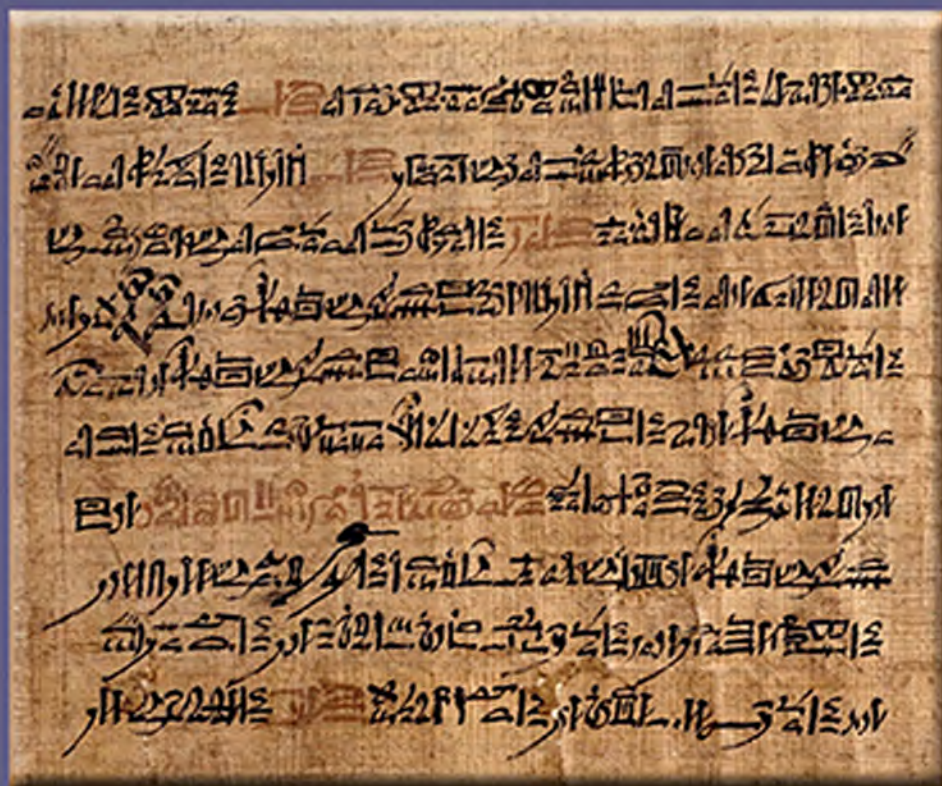


THE LANGUAGE OF RAMESSES

LATE EGYPTIAN GRAMMAR



FRANÇOIS NEVEU

Translated by Maria Cannata

The Language of Ramesses: Late Egyptian Grammar

François Neveu

Translated from the French by
Maria Cannata

Oxbow Books
Oxford & Philadelphia

Published in the United Kingdom in 2015 by
OXBOW BOOKS
10 Hythe Bridge Street, Oxford OX1 2EW

and in the United States by
OXBOW BOOKS
908 Darby Road, Havertown, PA 19083

First published as la Langue des Ramsès: Grammaire du néo-égyptien © Éditions Khéops 2010
English translation © Maria Cannata 2015

Paperback Edition: ISBN 978-1-78297-868-8
Digital Edition: ISBN 978-1-78297-869-5

A CIP record for this book is available from the British Library
Library of Congress Cataloging-in-Publication Data

Neveu, François, author.

[Grammaire du néo-égyptien. English]

The language of Ramesses: late Egyptian grammar / François Neveu; translated from the
French by Maria Cannata.

1 online resource.

Includes index.

Description based on print version record and CIP data provided by publisher; resource not
viewed.

ISBN 978-1-78297-869-5 (epub) -- ISBN 978-1-78297-870-1 (prc) -- ISBN 978-1-78297-871-8 ·
(pdf) -- ISBN 978-1-78297-868-8 1. Egyptian language--Grammar. I. Title.

PJ1135

493'.15--dc23

2015003166

All rights reserved. No part of this book may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means,
electronic or mechanical including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval
system, without permission from the publisher in writing.

Printed in the United Kingdom by Berforts Information Press

For a complete list of Oxbow titles, please contact:

UNITED KINGDOM

Oxbow Books

Telephone (01865) 241249, Fax (01865) 794449

Email: oxbow@oxbowbooks.com

www.oxbowbooks.com

UNITED STATES OF AMERICA

Oxbow Books

Telephone (800) 791-9354, Fax (610) 853-9146

Email: queries@casemateacademic.com

www.casemateacademic.com/oxbow

Oxbow Books is part of the Casemate Group

Front cover: Extract from

The Tale of the Two Brothers

(Papyrus D'Orbiney, 19th dynasty)

To Pascal Vernus



P. Anastasi III, 5, 4.

Contents

Introduction	XV
Aim of the book	XV
Late Egyptian	XV
General organisation of the book	XVI
Notes on the transliteration and the passages cited	XVI
Acknowledgments	XVII
Translator's note	XVII
Bibliographical orientation	XVIII
Abbreviations	XIX
Part one: Morphology	1
1. Nouns	3
1.1 Morphology	3
1.2 Syntax	3
2. Articles	4
2.1 The definite article	4
2.2 The indefinite article	5
3. Demonstratives	7
3.1 First paradigm	7
3.1.1 Forms	7
3.1.2 Usage	7
3.1.3 Remark	8
3.2 Second paradigm	8
3.2.1 Forms	8
3.2.2 Usage	8
4. Possessives	10
4.1 Forms	10
4.2 Usage	10
5. Numbers	12
5.1 Cardinal numbers	12
5.1.1 Number one	12
5.1.2 Number two	12
5.1.3 Numbers 3 to 9	12
5.1.4 Numbers from 10 onward	13
5.2 Ordinal numbers	14
5.2.1 'First'	14

5.2.2 From the ‘second’	14
6. The indefinites	16
6.1 <i>nb</i>	16
6.2 <i>ky</i>	16
6.2.1 Used as adjective	17
6.2.2 Used as pronoun	17
6.3 <i>nkt</i>	17
7. Personal pronouns	19
7.1 Suffix pronouns	19
7.1.1 Spellings	19
7.1.2 Usage	19
7.2 Dependent pronouns	20
7.2.1 Spellings	20
7.2.2 Usage	20
7.3 The new direct object pronouns	21
7.3.1 Spellings	21
7.3.2 Origin	21
7.3.3 Usage	21
7.4 Independent pronouns	22
7.4.1 Spellings	22
7.4.2 Usage	23
8. Prepositions	24
9. Adverbs	26
10. Particles	27
10.1 <i>hr</i>	27
10.2 <i>ir</i>	27
10.3 <i>pəwn</i>	27
10.4 <i>yə</i>	27
10.5 <i>mk</i> (old), or <i>ptr</i> (new)	27
11. Other common morphemes	28
11.1 Negative morphemes	28
11.2 Interrogative morphemes	28
11.2.1 Interrogative particles	28
11.2.2 Interrogative pronouns	28
11.2.3 Interrogative adverb	28
11.3 Converters	29
Part two: syntax	31
12. Fundamental notions	33
12.1 Autonomy	33

12.2	Initiality	33
12.3	The enunciation	33
12.3.1	Tools of the enunciation: narrative and non-narrative forms	34
12.3.2	The register of the enunciation: narrative and discourse	34
12.3.2.1	The narrative	34
12.3.2.2	The discourse	34
12.4	The strategy of the enunciation	35
12.4.1	The theory of the three points of view	35
12.4.2	The strategic or enunciative point of view	35
	Terminology	35
	Marked and unmarked utterances	36
The verbal system		39
13.	The infinitive	41
13.1	Morphology	41
13.2	Syntax	41
13.3	Aspectual value	41
13.4	Usage	41
13.4.1	Predicative usage	42
13.4.1.1	Perfective	42
13.4.1.2	Imperfect	43
13.4.2	Non-predicative usage	43
13.4.2.1	Noun phrase	43
13.4.2.1.1	Perfective	43
13.4.2.1.2	Imperfect	44
13.4.2.2	Prepositional phrase	44
14.	The pseudo-participle	46
14.1	Morphology	46
14.2	Values	46
14.3	Usage	47
14.3.1	With a proper subject, in grammaticalised verbal forms	47
14.3.2	With a subject already playing a role in a preceding clause	47
14.4	Remarks	48
Independent verbal forms		49
15.	The perfective <i>sđm.f</i>	51
15.1	The active perfective <i>sđm.f</i>	51
15.1.1	Usage	51
15.1.2	Negation	52
15.1.2.1	Origin	52
15.1.2.2	Morphology	52
15.1.2.3	Usage	53
15.2	The perfective <i>sđm.f</i> called 'passive'	53
15.2.1	Affirmative Forms	53
15.2.2	Negation	55

16. The First Present	56
16.1 Introduction	56
16.1.1 Subject.....	56
16.1.2 Predicate.....	56
16.2 The predicate is an adverb.....	57
16.3 The predicate is a prepositional phrase.....	58
16.4 The predicate is the <i>hr</i> + infinitive form.....	59
16.4.1 The immediate present	60
16.4.2 The habitual present	61
16.4.3 The general present	61
16.4.4 Negation	61
16.5 The predicate is the <i>m</i> + infinitive form	63
16.5.1 Excursus: the first future	63
16.6 The predicate is a pseudo-participle	63
16.6.1 Transitive verbs (except <i>rh</i>)	63
16.6.2 Intransitive verbs	64
16.6.2.1 Verbs of motion.....	64
16.6.2.2 Other intransitive verbs	66
16.7 Special case: the verb <i>rh</i>	67
16.7.1 <i>rh</i> + noun (or pronoun).....	68
16.7.2 <i>rh</i> + infinitive	68
16.8 Summary: the main forms of the First Present	69
17. The negative aorist	70
17.1 Introduction	70
17.2 Values.....	70
17.3 <i>bw sdm.n.f</i>	70
17.4 <i>bw sdm.f</i>	70
17.5 <i>bw iri.f sdm</i>	71
17.6 Excursus: the <i>hr-sdm.f</i> form	72
18. The expression ‘not yet’	74
18.1 Active voice.....	74
18.2 Passive voice	74
19. The Third Future	76
19.1 Introduction	76
19.2 Pronominal subject	76
19.3 Nominal subject.....	77
19.4 Remarks.....	78
20. The independent prospective <i>sdm.f</i>	80
21. The imperative	83
21.1 Affirmative forms.....	83
21.2 Negative forms	85
21.2.1 General case	85
21.2.2 Special case: the verb <i>rdi</i>	86

22. The existential predication	88
22.1 Affirmative Forms	88
22.2 Negative Forms	89
22.3 Remarks	89
23. Second tenses	91
23.1 Introduction	91
23.2 How second tenses work	91
23.3 How to translate second tenses	92
23.4 The second tenses periphrased	93
23.4.1 Affirmative Forms	93
23.4.2 Negative Forms	94
23.5 Modal second tenses (non-periphrased)	95
23.6 Other second tenses	96
24. Independent forms: recapitulation	99
24.1 Table of the main independent forms	99
24.2 Conjugation of transitive verbs	100
24.3 Conjugation of intransitive verbs	101
24.3.1 Verbs of motion	101
24.3.2 Other intransitive verbs	102
24.4 Final remarks	102
Non-independent verbal forms	105
25. The continuative forms	107
25.1 Introduction	107
25.2 The sequential	107
25.2.1 Leaning onto an independent form	107
25.2.2 Leaning onto an adverbial clause	108
25.2.3 Leaning onto a non-verbal circonstant	108
25.2.4 Excursus: other continuative-narrative forms	109
25.3 The conjunctive	110
26. The non-independent prospective <i>sđm.f</i>	113
26.1 In complement clauses following all forms of the verb <i>rdi</i>	113
26.2 In purpose clauses	113
26.3 In subordinate clauses introduced by a preposition or a conjunction	113
27. The participles	115
27.1 Active participles	115
27.1.1 Morphology	115
27.1.2 Syntax	115
27.1.3 Values	115
27.1.4 Usage	115
27.2 Passive participles	116
27.2.1 Morphology	116
27.2.2 Syntax	116
27.2.3 Usage	117

28. The relative forms	119
28.1 Morphology.....	119
28.2 Syntax.....	119
28.3 Values.....	119
28.4 Usage.....	119
28.4.1 As attributive adjective.....	119
28.4.2 As noun.....	121
29. Relative clauses introduced by <i>nty</i>	123
29.1 Syntax.....	123
29.2 Temporal values.....	123
29.3 Usage.....	123
29.4 <i>nty</i> + First Present, affirmative forms.....	123
29.4.1 The antecedent is the same as the subject of the relative clause.....	123
29.4.2 The antecedent is different from the subject of the relative clause.....	124
29.5 <i>nty</i> + First Present, negative forms.....	125
29.6 <i>nty</i> + Third Future.....	126
29.7 <i>nty</i> + <i>bwpwy.f sdm</i>	127
29.8 <i>nty</i> + varia.....	127
30. Relative clauses introduced by (<i>i</i>).<i>wn</i> or (<i>i</i>).<i>wn.f</i>	129
30.1 Introduction.....	129
30.2 Relative clauses introduced by the participle (<i>i</i>). <i>wn</i>	129
30.3 Relative clauses introduced by the relative form (<i>i</i>). <i>wn.f</i>	130
31. Table of relative clauses (defined antecedent)	131
32. Adverbial clauses introduced by <i>iw</i>	132
32.1 Introduction.....	132
32.2 Used as adverbial clauses.....	133
32.2.1 The circumstantial is placed after the main clause (unmarked order).....	133
32.2.1.1 General case.....	133
32.2.1.2 Special cases.....	135
32.2.1.2.1 The adverbial clause is focalised by a second tense.....	135
32.2.1.2.2 The adverbial clause is marked by the particle <i>hr</i>	135
32.2.2 The adverbial clause is placed before the main clause (marked order).....	135
32.3 Used in place of a relative clause.....	136
32.4 Used in place of a complement clause.....	137
32.5 Excursus: the construction of verbs called ‘operators’.....	138
32.5.1 Verb + direct object pronoun + pseudo-verbal predicate.....	138
32.5.2 Verb + direct object pronoun + adverbial clause.....	138
32.5.3 Verb + adverbial clause (without direct object pronoun).....	139
32.5.4 Verb + <i>r-d</i> + independent form.....	139
32.6 Remarks.....	139
33. Adverbial clauses introduced by <i>ir</i>	140
33.1 The particle <i>ir</i>	140
33.2 Correlative systems introduced by <i>ir</i>	140

33.2.1	The protasis incorporates <i>ir</i> + independent verbal form	140
33.2.1.1	The protasis incorporates <i>ir</i> + First Present	141
33.2.1.1.1	The predicate of the First Present is a prepositional phrase	141
33.2.1.1.2	The predicate of the First Present is (<i>hr</i>) + infinitive	141
33.2.1.1.3	The predicate of the First Present is <i>m</i> + infinitive	142
33.2.1.1.4	The predicate of the First Present is a stative	142
33.2.1.2	The protasis incorporates <i>ir</i> + <i>sđm.f</i>	142
33.2.1.2.1	<i>ir</i> + perfective <i>sđm.f</i>	142
33.2.1.2.2	<i>ir</i> + prospective <i>sđm.f</i>	143
33.2.1.3	The protasis incorporates a Third Future	143
33.2.1.4	The protasis incorporates an existential sentence	143
33.2.2	The protasis incorporates <i>ir</i> + non-independent verbal form	143
33.2.2.1	The protasis incorporates a sequential	143
33.2.2.2	The protasis incorporates a circumstantial First Present	144
33.2.2.3	The protasis incorporates <i>m-đr sđm.f</i> or <i>m-ht sđm.f</i>	144
33.2.2.4	Remarks	145
33.2.3	The protasis incorporates the ambiguous syntagma <i>iw.f (?) sđm</i>	146
33.3	Conclusion	146
33.4	Excursus A: thematisations with <i>ir</i>	147
33.4.1	Thematisation of the subject	147
33.4.2	Thematisation of the direct object pronoun	147
33.4.3	Thematisation of a noun (or equivalent) object of a preposition	148
33.4.4	Thematisation of the subject of a complement clause	148
33.5	Excursus B: <i>ir</i> + adverb / verbal form	148
33.6	Excursus C: <i>ir</i> + prepositional phrase / verbal form	149
34.	Adverbial clauses introduced by <i>wnn</i>	150
34.1	Introduction	150
34.2	Examples	151
34.3	Remark: another use of <i>wnn</i>	152
35.	Adverbial clauses introduced by <i>inn</i>	153
35.1	Introduction	153
35.2	Usage	153
36.	Adverbial clauses introduced by <i>hn</i>, <i>bsi</i> and <i>hl (hnr)</i>	155
36.1	Introduction	155
36.2	The conditional introduced by <i>hn</i>	155
36.3	The conditional introduced by <i>bsi</i>	156
36.4	The conditional introduced by <i>hl (hnr)</i>	157
37.	The <i>i.iri.t.f sđm</i> form	158
37.1	Introduction	158
37.2	Examples	158
37.3	Remarks	158

38. Recapitulation	160
38.1 The morpheme <i>iw</i> in the synchrony of Late Egyptian	160
38.2 The different values of <i>sdm.f</i>	161
38.3 Uses of the prosthetic yod	161
38.4 The morphemes <i>wnn</i> and <i>wn</i>	161
38.5 The negative morphemes	162
Nominal forms	165
39. The nominal sentence with nominal predicate	166
39.1 Introduction	166
39.2 Classification predication	166
39.2.1 Examples in the first two persons	167
39.2.1.1 General case: the predicate is a noun	167
39.2.1.2 Special case: the predicate is an interrogative pronoun	169
39.2.2 Examples in the third person	169
39.2.2.1 Examples of the form <i>B Ø</i>	169
39.2.2.2 Examples of the form <i>B p3y</i>	171
39.2.2.3 Extensions of previous constructions	171
39.2.2.3.1 Examples of the form <i>B Ø p3 A</i>	172
39.2.2.3.2 Examples of the form <i>ir p3 A B p3y</i> and variants	172
39.3 Identification predication	174
39.3.1 Examples in the first two persons	175
39.3.2 Examples in the third person	177
39.3.2.1 Examples of the unmarked paradigm	177
39.3.2.1.1 Examples of the form <i>p3 B Ø</i>	178
39.3.2.1.2 Examples of the form <i>p3 B p3y</i>	178
39.3.2.1.3 Examples of the form <i>ir p3 A p3 B Ø</i>	179
39.3.2.1.4 Example of the form <i>p3 A p3 B Ø</i>	180
39.3.2.2 Examples belonging to the marked paradigm	180
39.4 Important remark	181
40. The nominal sentence with adjectival predicate	182
40.1 Introduction	182
40.2 <i>nfr Ø</i>	182
40.3 <i>nfr Ø se</i>	183
40.4 <i>nfr Ø (p3) A</i>	183
40.5 Special case	185
41. Expressing possession	186
41.1 The possessor is represented by a name (or an interrogative pronoun)	186
41.2 The possessor is represented by a personal pronoun	188
41.2.1 Examples with the new independent pronoun	188
41.2.2 Examples with the traditional independent pronoun	189
41.3 Examples using both modes of expressing possession	190
41.4 Remark: the independent pronoun used as an attribute	190

42. Cleft sentences	192
42.1 Introduction.....	192
42.1.1 What is a cleft sentence?	192
42.1.2 Cleft sentences in Late Egyptian	193
42.1.2.1 The (true) cleft sentence (type I)	193
42.1.2.2 The pseudo-cleft sentence (type II)	195
42.2 Rhematisation the subject of the predicative plain verbal sentence	199
42.2.1 The phrase is in the active voice (type I or II)	199
42.2.1.1 Past (type I)	199
42.2.1.2 Present (type II)	201
42.2.1.3 Imperfect (type II)	203
42.2.1.4 Aorist (type I)	204
42.2.1.5 Future (type I)	205
42.2.2 The sentence is in the passive voice (type II)	206
42.3 Rhematisation of the direct objet of the predicative plain sentence (type II)	207
42.3.1 Past	207
42.3.2 Present.....	209
42.3.3 Future	209
42.4 Rhematisation of the verb of the predicative plain sentence (type II)	210
42.4.1 Past.....	210
42.4.2 Imperfect	210
42.4.3 Future	211
42.5 Special cases.....	211
42.5.1 The relative clause of the second member is strictly verbal.....	212
42.5.2 The relative clause of the second member is non verbal.....	212
42.6 Conclusion	213
 Part Three: appendices	 217
 43. Appendix one: interrogative syntagmas	 218
43.1 Introduction	218
43.2 Syntagmas introduced by an interrogative particle	218
43.2.1 Syntagmas introduced by <i>in</i>	218
43.2.1.1 <i>in</i> + <i>sdm.f</i>	218
43.2.1.1.1 <i>in</i> + perfective <i>sdm.f</i>	219
43.2.1.1.2 <i>in</i> + prospective <i>sdm.f</i>	219
43.2.1.2 <i>in</i> + <i>bwpwy.f sdm</i>	220
43.2.1.3 <i>in</i> + Third Future	220
43.2.1.4 <i>in</i> + First Present.....	220
43.2.1.5 <i>in</i> + <i>bw iri.f sdm</i> (negative aorist)	221
43.2.1.6 <i>in</i> + Second Tense	221
43.2.1.7 <i>in</i> + existential predication	221
43.2.1.8 <i>in</i> + nominal sentence with substantival predicate	222
43.2.1.9 <i>in</i> + nominal sentence with adjectival predicate	222
43.2.1.10 <i>in</i> + cleft sentence.....	222
43.2.1.11 Special case	223
43.2.1.12 Remarks.....	223
43.2.2 Sentences introduced by <i>ist</i>	223

43.2.2.1	<i>ist</i> + <i>bw iri.s sdm</i> (negative aorist)	223
43.2.2.2	<i>ist</i> + First Present	224
43.2.2.3	<i>ist</i> + Second Tense	224
43.2.2.4	<i>ist</i> + nominal sentence with substantival predicate	225
43.2.2.5	<i>ist</i> + nominal sentence with adjectival predicate	225
43.2.3	Syntagmas introduced by <i>is-bn</i>	225
43.2.3.1	Possible examples	225
43.2.3.2	Probable examples	225
43.2.3.3	Examples certain	226
43.3	Syntagmas incorporating an interrogative pronoun	226
43.3.1	Syntagmas with <i>iḥ</i>	227
43.3.1.1	Nominal sentences	227
43.3.1.2	Cleft sentences	228
43.3.1.2.1	Past	229
43.3.1.2.2	Present	229
43.3.1.2.3	Future	229
43.3.1.3	Verbal sentences	229
43.3.1.3.1	<i>iḥ</i> subject	229
43.3.1.3.2	<i>iḥ</i> direct object	230
43.3.1.3.3	<i>iḥ</i> object of a preposition	231
43.3.2	Syntagmas with <i>nim</i>	231
43.3.2.1	Nominal sentences	232
43.3.2.2	Cleft sentences	233
43.3.2.2.1	Past	233
43.3.2.2.2	Future	233
43.3.2.3	Verbal sentences	233
43.3.2.3.1	<i>nim</i> subject	233
43.3.2.3.2	<i>nim</i> genitive	233
43.3.2.3.3	<i>nim</i> object of a preposition	234
43.3.3	Syntagmas with <i>it</i>	234
43.3.4	Syntagmas with <i>wr</i>	234
43.3.5	Remarks	235
43.4	Syntagmas incorporating an interrogative adverb	235
43.5	Questions without interrogative morphemes	236
44.	Appendix two: Syllabic Writing	239
44.1	Introduction	240
44.2	Usage	240
44.2.1	Writing foreign words	240
44.2.2	Writing words of foreign origin (loan words)	241
44.2.3	Writing Egyptian words	241
Indexes		243
Grammar index		245
Egyptian grammar index		248
Coptic index		250
Index of texts cited		252
List of figures		267

Introduction

Aim of the book

This book is designed for people with a good knowledge of Middle Egyptian who wish to read texts written in Late Egyptian, the language in use in Egypt during the New Kingdom.

The result of ten years of teaching Late Egyptian grammar at the *École pratique de hautes études* and the *Kheops Institute* (Paris), this book is not a comprehensive grammar, which remains to be written, but aims to be a pedagogical tool,¹ which objective will be achieved if it allows its readers to study and understand 90-95% of texts. The remainder corresponds to very rare constructions with incomprehensible expressions, either because our knowledge of the language is still lacking, or because the text is incorrect or damaged.²

Although a teaching tool, this book is resolutely ‘modern’ and reflects the most recent work. In order to make it accessible to a wide audience, every attempt has been made to avoid departing from the linguistic terminology traditionally used in grammars of Egyptian without very strong reasons.

Late Egyptian

Late Egyptian corresponds to the language spoken from the 17th to the 24th dynasty. During the Amarna period (circa 1364 BC) Late Egyptian was adopted as a written language (in private letters, administrative, legal and literary texts, and some official inscriptions). Essentially, this is the common language of the Ramesside age.³

Together with demotic and Coptic, this stage of the language belongs under the ‘second phase’ of the Egyptian idiom.

Here are briefly summarised its main features:

- gender and number are indicated by determiners (articles, demonstratives, possessives) prefixed to nouns, rather than by endings;
- the opposition defined – undefined is morphologically marked by the definite and indefinite articles (or their lack thereof);
- the disappearance of the copula *pw* results in the replacement of Middle Egyptian three-member nominal sentence, having a substantival predicate, with a two-member sentence;
- the conjugation increasingly favours the *Svo*⁴ order. This shift results from the evolution of verbal forms – such as the First Present or the Third Future – which were developed on the model of the nominal sentence with adverbial predicate, and eventually absorb it completely. At the same time, the suffix conjugation simplifies and declines in importance – the prospective is the only one to survive out of the four Middle Egyptian *sdm.f* forms, while the *sdm.n.f* loses the *n* thus becoming the perfective *sdm.f*.⁵ Finally, it is possible to observe the establishment of a precise temporal system that facilitated the development of the periphrastic conjugation with the auxiliary *iri*, and the use of the past converter *wn*;
- the free morpheme *iw* introduces henceforth a non-independent, non-initial sentence, basically taking on the role of an adverbial clause.

¹ This is the reason for the deliberate omissions and the repetitions that one cannot fail to note in this work.



² It is clear that in the Ramesside Period scribes and students did not always understand what they recopied.

³ Gardiner, *EG*, p. 5; Vernus, *Les langues dans le monde ancien et moderne*, Paris, 1988, p. 162; Winand, *Morphologie*, p. 3-17.

⁴ Subject + verb + object.

⁵ Therefore, only two *sdm.f* forms remain in Late Egyptian: the prospective and the perfective.

To these traits, which distinguish Late Egyptian from the ‘first phase’ stages of the language, can be added some of its evolutionary trends:

- as Egypt opens to the outside world, there develops, next to the traditional graphic system, the so-called syllabic writing, used whenever the scribe does not feel linguistically driven (see Appendix 2);
- the orthography (or the writing) tries to follow the evolution of the pronunciation. To confine this to a single example: *mdt* |  ‘word’ becomes through the loss of the final *t* and the passage from *d* to *t*, *mty* | ;⁶
- in terms of lexicon a number of ‘outdated’ words are replaced with more ‘modern’ ones having the same meaning: *mꜣꜣ* ‘see’ becomes *pꜣr*, *sꜣ* ‘son’ becomes *šꜣr*, *ḥꜣnꜣ* ‘with’ becomes *irm*, etc.;
- but there is also a semantic shift affecting certain words: for example, the word *mdt* (or *mty*) ‘word,’ quoted above, very often takes on the meaning of ‘case, matter,’ etc.

General organisation of the book

The first part covers most of the fundamental notions on the different categories of morphemes, with the exception of the verb. The second part is devoted to the syntax. After a chapter on the basics of Late Egyptian forms, the verbal system is introduced, which is then followed by a study of ‘nominal forms.’ Two appendices, one devoted to interrogative constructions and one to syllabic writing, complete the work.

Note on the transliteration and the passages cited

The many examples used to illustrate the grammatical notions discussed, although for the most part derived from original hieratic texts, are reproduced in hieroglyphs, written from left to right, using MacScribe programme. No attempt has been made to reproduce the original text exactly (in terms of forms, arrangement of signs and minor lacunes), unnecessary in a teaching grammar, for which the reader should refer to the original sources or to their latest editions systematically referenced for each example. Note the use of the abbreviation *v*^o for ‘verso,’ while, if no abbreviation is used, the passage is inscribed on the ‘recto.’

The transliteration used is primarily that adopted by J. Černý-S. Groll in *A Late Egyptian Grammar*. The only notable exception being the use of *se* to transliterate the pronouns of the third person singular whenever the script does not correspond to the theoretical spelling (see *infra* §7.2.1).

⁶ Cf. the coptic **MTAY(B)**. The same evolution for *bdt* ‘wheat’ and *šndt* ‘Nile acacia.’

Acknowledgments

This book would never have been written if Vernus Pascal, director of studies at the *École pratique de hautes études* in Paris, had not entrusted me with the teaching of Late Egyptian at this institution. It is to him that I owe the greatest debt – it was him who taught me the language, taught me to love it and, through it, all who spoke and/or wrote it.

I also owe much to Robert Navailles, my longtime friend, with whom I meticulously discussed every issue of ‘grammatical doctrine.’ His criticisms and suggestions were invaluable to me.

I would also like to thank Patricia Cassonnet for allowing me access to her research on the second tenses in Late Egyptian, which was taken into account in writing the corresponding chapter of this grammar.

Christine Gallois, director of the Kheops Institute, who willingly took the odds of publishing this book, is ensured my deep gratitude.

Marie-Claire Cuvillier and Jean-Louis Chassaing took upon themselves the burden of reading the manuscript, and correct the countless clerical errors as well as the inevitable careless mistakes, they also offered many improvements to the text, and to them I am extremely grateful.

Farout Dominique inserted the hieroglyphic text, and Olivier Cabon formatted the volume.

Finally, I cannot forget the warm and demanding public that represent the students and audience of the EpHE and of the Kheops courses, whose encouragement never failed me.

François Neveu, Paris, 1996

Translator’s note

The scope of translating this grammar into English is to offer an additional learning tool to students who wish to learn this stage of the Egyptian language, but do not feel entirely at home with French.

In producing this translation, I have strived to keep it as close as possible to the original French, which, in some instances, has meant choosing a more literal translation in preference to one in good English style. In particular, I have attempted to render the French translation of the Egyptian passages as closely as possible in English, although I am aware that I may not have succeeded in every instance.

In typesetting the volume I have maintained, as far as possible, the layout of the original publication. The hieroglyphic passages were all rewritten using Inscribe Saqqara Technology with the exception of a small number of examples which particular sign arrangement could not be reproduced with the programme used. For the linguistic terminology I have relied mostly on the online *SIL International French-English Glossary of Linguistic Terms*, although, in a small number of cases I have preferred to give also the original French term, in brackets, next to its English translation.

Finally, I would like to express my deep gratitude to my friends and colleagues who kindly helped with my queries on English, French and Egyptian grammar, linguistics and translations – Leire Olabarria, Christina Adams, Liz McKillop and Cisco Bosch-Puche. I would also like to express my sincerest gratitude to OxbowBooks/Casemate, and especially the Publishing Director, Clare Litt, for entrusting to me the translation of this work, and for patiently waiting for its completion, which was delayed by my prolonged period of illness.

Bibliographical notes

A complete bibliography can be found in recent literature, for example J. Winand cited below. The following works are a good starting point for beginner students of Late Egyptian.

In terms of grammars, the works of J. Černý and S. Groll, P. Frandsen, H. Satzinger and J. Winand are essential. A. Erman's and M. Korostovtsev's grammars are surpassed as regards the verbal system, but they are still useful for studying different categories of morphemes (clauses, particles, adverbs, etc.).

In the lexicographic field, the only dictionary specifically dedicated to Late Egyptian, by L. Lesko, is rather mediocre. One should, therefore, consult the traditional dictionaries (for example the recent one by R. Hannig, which is excellent), and the *Année lexicographique* by D. Meeks (three volumes published), and, for the words of Semitic origin, the recent book by J. Hoch.

- S. Allam, *Hieratische Ostraka und Papyri aus der Ramessidenzeit*, Tübingen, 1973.
A. M. Bakir, *Egyptian Epistolography from the Eighteenth to the Twentyfirst Dynasty*, Cairo, 1970 (= *BdE* 48).
R. Caminos, *Late Egyptian Miscellanies*, Oxford, 1953.
J. Černý, *A Community of Workmen at Thebes in the Ramesside Period*, Cairo, 1973 (= *BdE* 50).
J. Černý, *The Valley of the Kings*, Cairo, 1973 (= *BdE* 61).
J. Černý, *Late Ramesside Letters*, Brussels, 1939.
J. Černý, *Papyrus hiératiques de Deir el-Medineh I and II*, Cairo, 1978-1986.
J. Černý-S. Groll, *A Late Egyptian Grammar*, 3rd ed., Rome, 1984.
A. Erman, *Neuägyptische Grammatik*, Leipzig, 1933.
P. Frandsen, *An Outline of the Late Egyptian Verbal System*, Copenhagen, 1974.
A. Gardiner, *Late Egyptian Stories*, Brussels, 1932.
A. Gardiner, *Late Egyptian Miscellanies*, Brussels, 1937.
A. Gardiner, *Ramesside Administrative Documents*, London, 1948.
S. Groll, *The Negative Verbal System of Late Egyptian*, London, 1970.
S. Groll, *Non Verbal Sentence Patterns in Late Egyptian*, London, 1967.
J. Hoch, *Semitic Words in Egyptian Texts of the New Kingdom and Third Intermediate Period*, Princeton, 1994.
R. Hannig, *Großes Handwörterbuch Ägyptisch-Deutsch*, Mayence, 1995.
J. Janssen, *Commodity Prices from the Ramessid Period*, Leiden, 1975.
J. Janssen, *Late Ramesside letters and Communications*, London, 1991.
K. Kitchen, *Ramesside Inscriptions*, 8 volumes published, Oxford, 1968-1990.
M. Korostovtsev, *Grammaire du néo-égyptien*, Moscow, 1973.
J.-M. Kruchten, *Études de syntaxe néo-égyptien*, Brussels, 1982.
L. Lesko, *A Dictionary of late Egyptian*, 5 volumes, Berkeley, 1982-1990.
A. G. MacDowell, *Jurisdiction in the Workmen's Community of Deir el-Medina*, Leiden, 1990.
T. E. Peet, *The Great Tomb Robberies of the Twentieth Dynasty*, Oxford, 1930.
H. Satzinger, *Neuägyptische Studien*, Vienna, 1976.
D. Valbelle, *Les ouvriers de la Tombe*, Cairo, 1985 (= *BdE* 96).
P. Vernus, *Chants d'amour de l'Égypte antique*, Paris, 1992.
P. Vernus, *Affaires et scandales sous les Ramses*, Paris, 1993.
E. Wente, *Late Ramesside Letters*, Chicago, 1959.
E. Wente, *Letters from Ancient Egypt*, Atlanta, 1990.
J. Winand, *Études de néo-égyptien I, La morphologie verbale*. Liege. 1992.

Abbreviations

Allam, <i>HOP</i>	S. Allam, <i>Hieratische Ostraka und Papyri</i> , 3 vols., Tübingen, 1973.
<i>BIFAO</i>	<i>Bulletin de l'Institut français d'archéologie orientale</i> , Cairo.
<i>CdE</i>	<i>Chronique d'Égypte</i> , Brussels.
<i>CED</i>	J. Černý, <i>Coptic Etymological Dictionary</i> , Cambridge, 1976.
Černý, <i>Community</i>	J. Černý, <i>A Community of Workmen at Thebes in the Ramesside Period</i> , Cairo, 1973.
<i>CLEM</i>	R. Caminos, <i>Late Egyptian Miscellanies</i> , Oxford, 1963.
<i>Crossroad I</i>	<i>Crossroad, Conference on Egyptian Grammar</i> , Copenhagen, 1987.
<i>DE</i>	<i>Discussion in Egyptology</i> .
Doret, <i>Narrative</i>	E. Doret, <i>The Narrative Verbal System of Old and Middle Egyptian</i> , Geneva, 1986.
<i>Festschrift Westendorf</i>	<i>Studien zu Sprache und Religion Ägyptens I</i> , Göttingen, 1984.
Frandsen, <i>LEVS</i>	P. J. Frandsen, <i>An Outline of the Late Egyptian Verbal System</i> , Copenhagen, 1974.
Gardiner, <i>EG</i>	A. Gardiner, <i>Egyptian Grammar</i> , 3rd ed., Oxford, 1957.
<i>GM</i>	<i>Göttinger Miszellen</i> , Göttingen.
Groll, <i>Negative</i>	S. Groll, <i>The Negative Verbal System of Late Egyptian</i> , London, 1970.
Groll, <i>Non Verbal</i>	S. Groll, <i>Non Verbal Sentence Patterns in Late Egyptian</i> , London, 1967.
<i>HO</i>	J. Černý-A. Gardiner, <i>Hieratic Ostraca</i> , I, Oxford, 1957.
<i>IFAO</i>	<i>Institut français d'archéologie orientale</i> .
<i>JEA</i>	<i>The Journal of Egyptian Archaeology</i> , London.
<i>JNES</i>	<i>Journal of Near Eastern Studies</i> , Chicago.
Janssen, <i>CP</i>	J. Janssen, <i>Commodity Prices from the Ramessid Period</i> , Leiden, 1975.
Janssen, <i>Ship's logs</i>	J. Janssen, <i>Two Ancient Egyptian Ship's Logs</i> , Leiden, 1961.
Johnson, <i>DVS</i>	J. Johnson, <i>The Demotic Verbal System</i> , Chicago, 1976.
Korostovtsev, <i>Grammaire</i>	M. Korostovtsev, <i>Grammaire du néo-égyptien</i> , Moscow, 1973.
<i>KRI</i>	K. Kitchen, <i>Ramesside Inscriptions</i> , 8 vol., Oxford, 1968-1990.
<i>LÄ</i>	<i>Lexikon der Ägyptologie</i> , Wiesbaden.
Lefebvre, <i>Grammaire</i>	G. Lefebvre, <i>Grammaire de l'égyptien classique</i> , 2nd ed., Cairo, 1955.
<i>LEG</i>	J. Černý-S. Groll, <i>A Late Egyptian Grammar</i> , 3rd ed., Rome, 1984.
<i>LEM</i>	A. Gardiner, <i>Late Egyptian Miscellanies</i> , Brussels, 1937.
<i>LES</i>	A. Gardiner, <i>Late Egyptian Stories</i> , Brussels, 1932.
<i>LingAeg</i>	<i>Lingua Aegyptia</i> , Göttingen.
<i>LRL</i>	J. Černý, <i>Late Ramesside Letters</i> , Brussels, 1939.
<i>NÄG</i>	A. Erman, <i>Neuägyptische Grammatik</i> , 2nd ed., Leipzig, 1933.
<i>Or.</i>	<i>Orientalia</i> , Rome.
<i>RAD</i>	A. Gardiner, <i>Ramesside Administrative Documents</i> , London, 1948.
<i>RdE</i>	<i>Revue d'égyptologie</i> , Paris.

<i>SAK</i>	<i>Studien zur Altägyptische Kultur</i> , Hamburg.
Satzinger, <i>NÄS</i>	H. Satzinger, <i>Neuägyptische Studien. Die Partikel ir. Das Tempussystem</i> , Vienna, 1976
<i>SEAP</i>	<i>Studi di egittologia e di antichità puniche</i> , Pisa.
Valbelle, Ouvriers	<i>Les ouvriers de la Tombe</i> , Cairo, 1985.
Vernus, Future	P. Vernus, <i>Future at Issue. Tense, Mood and Aspect in Middle Egyptian</i> , New Haven, 1990.
Wenre, <i>LRL</i>	E. Wente, <i>Late Ramesside Letters</i> . Chicago, 1967.
Winand, Morphologie	J. Winand, <i>Études de néo-égyptien I, La morphologie verbale</i> , Liege, 1992.
<i>ZDMG</i>	<i>Zeitschrift für morgenländischen</i> , Wiesbaden.

() Indicates the restoration of a morpheme which omission does not constitute an ‘error;’ for example: *iw.f(r) sdm* (Third Future), (*i*).*wn* (participle);

< > Indicates the restitution of a morpheme mistakenly left out by the scribe; for example *sdm.f*;

[] Indicates a passage in *lacuna*, a restoration may be included;

{ } Indicates an incorrect morpheme in the text and should not be taken into consideration;

* precedes examples constructed for the purpose of grammatical demonstration but are not actually attested.

PART ONE
MORPHOLOGY

Handwritten text in Arabic script, likely a fragment of a document or manuscript. The text is arranged in approximately 14 horizontal lines. The script is dense and characteristic of medieval Arabic. There are some faint markings and what appears to be a small number '5' on the right side of the page, possibly indicating a line or section. The text is somewhat faded and difficult to read in detail.

P. Cairo J 65739, 1-14 (cf. p. 11, 60, 111).

1. Nouns



In Late Egyptian there are two genders, masculine and feminine; as well as two numbers, singular and plural.

- Unlike classical Egyptian, Late Egyptian expresses the neuter by means of the masculine, the dual having practically disappeared from the current stage of the language.

1.1 Morphology

Theoretically, masculine nouns have no special endings, while feminine nouns take a *.t* ending. The plural is marked, for both genders, with a *.w*, with three short strokes, or both.

In practice, gender and number are indicated by the definite article, the demonstrative or the possessive. The endings, no longer pronounced, lost their significance and no longer need to be taken into account. Indeed, it is not uncommon to find masculine nouns with a *.t* ending, feminine ones without endings, as well as singular nouns marked with the endings of the plural (see *infra* §2).

- The feminine *.t* ending may have been retained in the pronunciation, and consequently writing, of Semitic loan words:  *mrkbt* 'chariot,'¹ and of nouns in the pronominal state (status pronominalis)  *psdt.f* 'his Ennead.'²

1.2 Syntax

Nouns can be **defined** or **undefined**. **Defined** nouns are preceded by a definite article, a demonstrative adjective or a possessive adjective. In addition, nouns that do not fall into the above categories, but are followed by a suffix pronoun,³ a proper name,⁴ or by *nb*,⁵ are treated as syntactically defined, and will be treated as such in the present study. **Undefined** nouns can be preceded by an indefinite article or by no morpheme at all.⁶

- The latter instance is frequent after the *m* (or the *r*) of predication,⁷ as well as in some nominal forms, see *infra* §39.2 and §42.2.2.

¹ P. BM 10326, V° 6-7 (= *LRL*, 19, 10).

² P. BM 10375, 6 (= *LRL*, 44, 10).

³ Unlike Middle Egyptian where a suffix is not defining. In Middle Egyptian, nouns with a suffix come under existential predication, which subject cannot be defined: *wn pr.f* 'there exists his house = he has a house.'

⁴ Example: *wdpw nsw ny-se-imm* 'the Royal Cupbearer Nesamun' – cf. English 'King Arthur.' See also *infra* §2, example 2.

⁵ Because *rmꜥ nb* designates men in their entirety (= mankind), it is a defined noun; similarly, *rmꜥ nb n pꜣ tꜣ*, denotes the country's population.







⁶ Also defined 'bare noun' *Ø A*.

⁷ Example: *X (i).wn m ꜥry pdt* 'X who had been chief of the archers,' P. BM 10052, 7, 11 (= *KRI* VI, 784, 13-14).

2. Articles

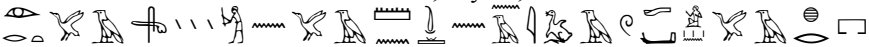
2.1 The definite article

The definite article derives from the late demonstrative pronoun of the classical stage of the language. It is placed before the noun it determines.

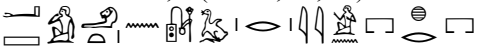
Masculine singular	 , var.  ,  ⁸	p3
Feminine singular		t3
Plural	 , var. 	n3

1. P. Mayer A, 3, 6 (= *KRI* VI, 808, 15-16).

‘The fourth month of the summer season, day 17,

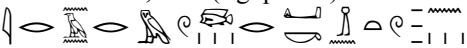

irt p3 smtr n p3 mn n n3 it3w n p3 hr
 proceeding (to) the examination of the remaining thieves of the tomb.’

2. P. BM 10284, 7 (= *LRL*, 48, 16).


š h3t n sš try n p3 hr
 ‘Be a pilot for the scribe of the tomb, Tjaroy.’

The form **n3 n** is still found during the 19th dynasty:

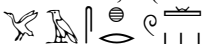
3. O. DM 554, v^o 5 (fig. p. 103).


ir n3 n rmww r(i).di.k in.tw.w (n).n
 ‘As for the fish (*lit.* fishes) that you had brought to us ...’

▪ In some rare instances *p3*, *t3*, *n3* keep the nuance of a demonstrative, as is the case with *p3 hrw* ‘this day,’ that is, ‘today.’

Consequence 1. By this stage of the language it was the definite article that indicated the gender and number of nouns, rather than the endings *.Ø*, *.t*, *.w*, *.wt*, which were no longer pronounced.

4. P. DM v, 2 (= *KRI* VI, 266, 1).


p3 shr
 ‘The position’ (singular).

⁸ Hieroglyphic texts.

5. O. Cairo 25589, 2 (= *KRI* v, 436, 7)



t3 *ih(t)*

‘The cow’ (feminine).

6. P. DM VII, 1.



p3 *ʕ3*

‘The donkey’ (masculine).

Consequence 2. The difference between defined and undefined nouns, which was morphologically unmarked in classical Egyptian, becomes so from this stage of the language.

2.2 The indefinite article

In the case of the indefinite article, there is no longer a distinction between masculine and feminine in the singular, while the spelling used does not always correspond to the gender of the nouns:

<i>Singular</i>	or	w^c (n)	a, an
<i>Plural</i>		nh(3)y n	some

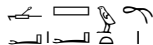
7. P. DM VI, v° 2-3 (= *KRI* VI, 267, 7-8)



y3 i.iri.s iy r ʕh^c m-b3h nfri-iry ʕ.w.s. hr w^c qd (i).ptr.s

‘Because if she came to consult (Ahmose)-Nefertari l.p.h., it is about a dream she had’ (*lit.* ‘came to stand in front ... a dream that she has seen’) (Second Tense).

8. P. Turin 1973, v° 5 (= *LRL*, 4, 6).

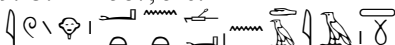


w^c ʕ^ct

‘A letter.’

The form **w^c n** is encountered, above all, in texts of the 19th dynasty:

9. O. DM 587, 5-6.

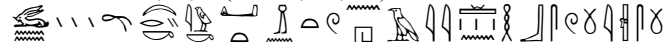


iw.i hr dit n.t w^c n d3iw

‘I gave you a loincloth.’

The plural, which is very rare, derives from a word meaning ‘some.’

10. P. BN 197, V, 3 (= *LRL*, 35, 13).



wnn tzy.i š't (hr) spr r.k iw.k (hr) dit in.tw nhzy n hbsw isw

‘As soon as my letter will reach you, you will have some (or ‘a few’) old garments sent.’

- In Egyptian, like in French and German, but unlike English, there is no distinction between the singular indefinite article and the numeral one.

3. Demonstratives

In Late Egyptian there are two paradigms of demonstratives.

3.1 First paradigm

3.1.1 Forms

Masculine singular



pzy

Feminine singular



tzy

Plural



nzy

3.1.2 Usage

These demonstratives are used above all as **adjectives**, and they correspond to **this, that, these, those**.

1. P. Mayer A, 4, 4 (= *KRI* VI, 811, 4-5).

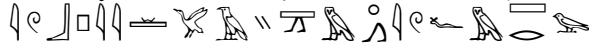


dd n.f tzy i. dd my n.i pz di.k pzy hd im

‘The vizier said to him “Tell me, please, the place where you put this silver.”’

However, they can also serve as pronouns, in which case they are translated as **this one, that one, these ones, those ones**:

2. P. Mayer A, 10, 22-3 (= *KRI* VI, 823, 12-13).



iw b(w)p(w)y pzy sm iw.f m šri

‘But this one did not go since he was a child’ (*lit.* ‘because he was a child’).

3. P. BM 10054, v^o 1, 6 (= *KRI* VI, 490, 9-10).



m hsb t 13 n pr-šz š.w.s. 4 rnpt r tzy

‘In year 13 of Pharaoh I.p.h. four years ago’ (*lit.* ‘four years until that one’).

This demonstrative is also employed as subject in nominal sentences of the (*pz*) *B pzy* type (see *infra* §39.2.2.2 and §39.3.2.1.2):


4. Doomed Prince, 4, 8-9 (= *LES*, 2, 5).




iw.f (hr) dd n.f tsm pzy

‘He said to him “it is a dog.”’

3.1.3 Remark

There is also a neuter form  *p3w*, translated as **this, that**, which is used mainly as pronoun:

5. P. Salt 124, 2, 1 (= *KRI* IV, 410, 12-13).

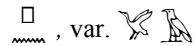


sh3 r p3w p3y.f sri pt r-h3t.f r t3 st n n3 iryw-c3

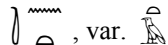

‘Denunciation concerning this: his son ran before him to the lodge (lit. ‘place’) of the porters.’

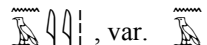

▪ One can still find some vestiges of the old paradigm – *pn, tn* – in set expressions; the main ones being *hrw pn* ‘this day’⁹ (not to be confused with *p3 hrw* ‘today’) and *st tn* ‘this place.’¹⁰

3.2 Second paradigm

3.2.1 Forms

Masculine singular , var.  *p(3)-n*, var. *p3-(n)*

Feminine singular , var.  *t(3)-nt*, var. *t3-(nt)*

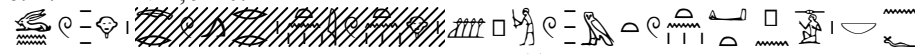
Plural , var.  *n3y-(n)*, var. *n3(y)-(n)*

▪ **Note:** the *n* is but very rarely written, and it is important not to confuse these forms with the definite articles.

3.2.2 Usage¹¹

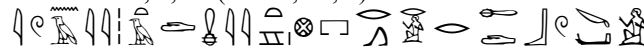
These demonstratives are always used as pronouns with the meaning of **this of, that of, these of, those of**:

6. P. DM xxviii, 9-10.


wnn.w hr [spr r.tn iw.tn hr] ssp.w mtw.tn dit p3-n s nb n.f

‘When they will reach you, you will receive them and you will give each man his (own)’ (lit. ‘that of each man to him’).

7. Wenamun, 2, 75 (= *LES*, 75, 1)


iw n3y-(n) t3 dmùt (hr) pr r.i r hdb.i

‘Those of the city came out against me to kill me.’

⁹ O. Cairo 25530, 1 (= *KRI* v, 542, 10), cited in §13.4.1.1, example 1.

¹⁰ P. Turin 1880, 1, 5 (= *RAD*, 53, 3), cited in §13.4.1.2, example 5.

¹¹ For this paradigm see Vernus, *Or* 50 (1981), 435-437.

They are also used in the construction of personal names, both masculine and feminine:

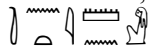
8. O. DM 364, 2-3 (= KRI v, 475, 2-3).



ʿnh n nb ʿ.w.s. in kl r dit ʿz n p(ʿ)-n-t3-wrt

‘Oath by the Lord l.p.h. (spoken) by Kel to give a donkey to Pentawer.’¹²

9. Wenamun, 1, 4 (= LES, 61, 5).



t(ʿ)-nt-ʿimn

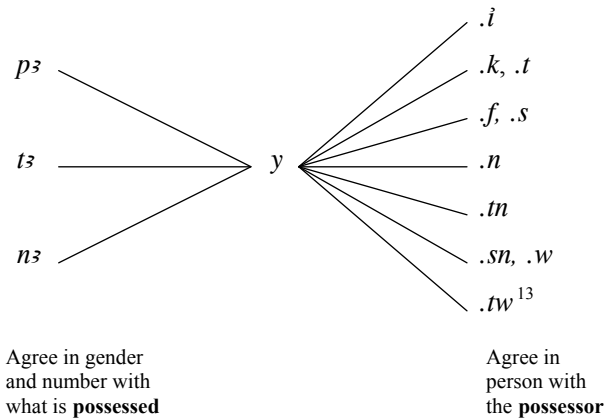
‘Tanetamun.’

¹² ‘He of the Great (fem.) one.’

4. Possessives

4.1 Forms

Possessives are formed by the addition of a suffix pronoun to the demonstratives.



4.2 Usage

The possessives are, above all, used as adjectives:

1. P. Turin 2021, 3, 6-8 (= *KRI* vI, 740, 16-741, 4).



n3 snw 3yw (n) n3y.f hrdw ... dd.w m r(3) w3 m3tw p3y.n it

‘The elder brothers among his children ... they said with one voice: “Our father is justified.”’

2. P. Orbiney, 5, 2 (= *LES*, 14, 6).



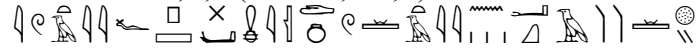
is bn ink t3y.k mwt

‘Am I not your mother?’

Much more rarely they are used as pronouns:

¹³ For *p3y.tw*, with the impersonal suffix, see Vernus *Or* 50 (1981), 435 and n. 17. Example: P. Salt 124, v° 1, 11 (= *KRI* IV, 413, 14): *sh3 r p3y.tw sm r sm3-t3 n N* ‘Denunciation concerning the fact that one went for the burial of N.’

3. P. BM 10054, 3, 6 (= *KRI* VI, 494, 7).¹⁴

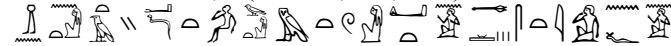


iw tzy.f pš mi-qd tzy.n ^{ᶜqᶜqᶜ}

‘Given that his share is very exactly the same as ours.’

▪ The classical method of expressing possession by means of a suffix continues to be used for some nouns designating elements intimately relating to an individual, or any other being: body parts, name, health, location, price ...¹⁵ Note that such nouns are considered as defined.¹⁶

4. P. Cairo J 65739, 5 (= *KRI* II, 800, 9-10).



in n.t tzy ᶜqdt šrit mtw.t dit n.i swnt.s i.n.f n.i

‘“Buy for yourself this little girl and pay me her price,” he said to me.’

¹⁴ Another example is found in Wenamun, 2, 10 (= *LES*, 68, 3-4).

¹⁵ A detailed list can be found in Černý-Groll, *LEG*, §4.2.9, p. 60-66.

¹⁶ See *supra* §1.2.

5. Numbers

5.1 Cardinal numbers

With the exception of the number one, cardinal numbers are never written phonetically.

5.1.1 Number one

w^c stands before the noun and its spellings are the same as those of the indefinite article (see *supra* §2.2). As with the latter, the distinction between genders is lost.

1. P. BM 10052, 5, 23 (= *KRI* VI, 781, 6); see also example n. 2.



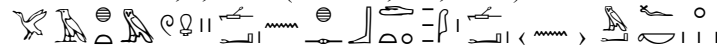
w^c *st* w^c *ty* *t3* *wn.n*

‘It is one, (and only) one, tomb that we opened’ (Cleft sentence).

5.1.2 Number two

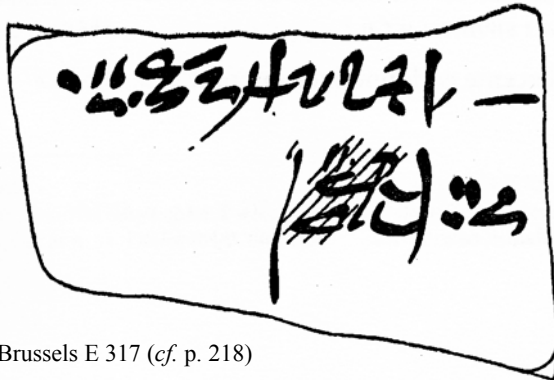
It is always placed after the noun. The latter remains in the singular, as do its determinatives, which agree in gender with it.

2. P. BM 10052, 6, 12-13 (= *KRI* VI, 782, 15-16).



$p3$ *htm* 2 w^c *n* *hsbd* $m3^c$ w^c *<n>* *mfk(t)*

‘The two seals, one of real lapis lazuli, and one of turquoise.’



O. Brussels E 317 (*cf.* p. 218)

5.1.3 Numbers 3 to 9

They are often placed before the noun. The latter remains in the singular, as do its determinatives, which agree in gender with it.

3. P. Turin 1880, v° 6, 4-5 (= *RAD*, 48, 12).

bn i.in.tw tzy.i 3 hrd hr.i

‘If one wants to bring my three daughters (to appear before a court), it will not be because of me’ (Negative modal second tense).

It is not uncommon to find that, with feminine nouns, the number itself shows gender agreement:

4. P. BM 10052, 3, 7-8 (= *KRI* VI, 773, 8-9).

iw.f (hr) dit n.n 4.t dnyt m pz 4 gr inn

‘He gave us four shares for the four of us too’ (*lit.* ‘namely the four us also’).

5.1.3 Numbers from 10 onward

Up to number 299 the rule is the same as above, except that the number is linked to the noun by means of the indirect genitive:

5. Amenemope, 27, 7.

ptr n.k tzy 30 n hwt

‘Look, for you(rself), at these thirty chapters.’

6. P. BM 10383, 2, 2 (= *KRI* VI, 835, 1).

tz mdt n pzy 150 n dbn n hmt

‘The matter of these 150 deben of copper.’

With numbers between 300 and 999 the determinatives of the noun are always feminine:¹⁷

7. P. Chester Beatty V, v° 5, 1.

tz 377 n ntr

‘The 377 gods.’

8. P. Mallet, VI, 4 (= *KRI* VI, 67, 15).

hr di.i s'd.tw kt 700 n ht

‘And I have had another 700 logs cut.’

Afterwards, they are all masculine.¹⁸

¹⁷ On the construction of cardinal numbers see Černý, *JEA* 23 (1937), 57-59.

¹⁸ Example: P. Mallet, 5, 7 (= *KRI* VI, 67, 8-9): *imi grg pzy 1000 n ht* ‘Have these thousand logs prepared.’

5.2 Ordinal numbers

5.2.1 'First'

The classical term *tpy* is still used at this time, and it is placed after the noun:

9. P. Abbott, 4, 14 (= *KRI* VI, 474, 5-6) (fig. p. 106).



hm ntr tpy n imn-rꜥ nsw ntrw

'The high priest of Amun-Ra, king of the gods' (*lit.* 'The first servant of god').

Another term used is *ḥꜣwty* 'that which is at the head:'

10. P. Orbiney, 5, 8 (= *LES*, 15, 1).



tꜣ iḥt ḥꜣwty

'The first cow.'

5.2.2 From the 'second'

These numbers are written using the participle of the verb *mḥ*, 'completing:'

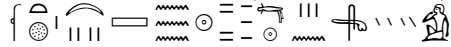
11. P. BM 10052, 15, 7 (= *KRI* VI, 800, 12).



iw.i (m) mḥ 4 ḥmt

'Given that I am the fourth wife' (*lit.* 'that which completes four women').

12. P. BM 10052, 8, 1 (= *KRI* VI, 785, 10).



ḥsbt 1 ꜣbd 4 šmw sw 7 mḥ hrw 3 n smty

'Year 1, 4th month of the summer season, day 7, 3rd day of examination.'

The participle of *mḥ* can have a prosthetic *yod*, sometimes written as *r*, as in the following example:

13. P. Abbott, 3, 10 (= *KRI* VI, 472, 1-2) (fig. p. 104).





\\ \\ o ||

pꜣ mr n nsw ... tꜣ-ꜣꜣ-ꜣꜣ ꜥ.w.s. r(=i).mḥ nsw tꜣ-ꜣꜣ ꜥ.w.s 2

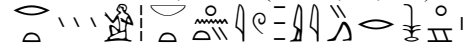
'The pyramid of the king ... Tao the elder l.p.h. who is a second king Tao l.p.h.'

6. The indefinites

6.1 *nb*

nb, ‘each, every, all’ in an affirmative context, ‘any’ in a negative context, is used solely as an adjective. The two spellings,  *nb* and  *nbt*, are used indistinctly, since the word had become invariable.

1. P. BM 10417, v^o 6-7 (= *LRL*, 28, 8-9).

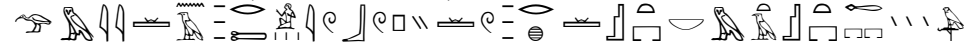


rmt nb nty iw.w (r) iy r rsy

‘All the people who will come to the south’

▪ In the example above, *rmt nb* is the antecedent of a relative clause introduced by *nty*. Given that the antecedent of such a clause should always be defined, its use here shows that a noun followed by *nb* is treated syntactically as defined (see *supra* §1.2 and *infra* §29.1).

2. P. Abbott, 7, 13-14 (= *KRI* VI, 481, 4-5): narrative.



gmy. Ø n3 rmt iw bwpw.w rh st nb m tz st pr-c₃ c.w.s

‘It was found that people did not know of any tomb in the necropolis of Pharaoh I.p.h.’ (*lit.* ‘one found the people, even though they did not know...’).

3. P. BM 10326, v^o 10-11 (= *LRL*, 19, 15-16).

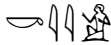


mtw.k h3b n.i p3 nty nb iw.k (r) irt.f

‘And you will write to me (about) all that you will do.’

6.2 *ky*

Masculine singular



ky

Feminine singular



kt

Plural



ktw

ky can be employed as pronoun or as adjective. In the latter instance, contrary to the general rule, it is placed before the noun. Although its meaning is generally ‘other, the other, another,’ sometimes *ky* does not refer back to someone or something like that already mentioned, in which case it is translated as ‘some, any.’¹⁹

¹⁹ Erman, *NAG*, §240; Černý, *CED*, p. 51; Vernus, *DE* 6, 81, n. e.

6.2.1 Used as adjective

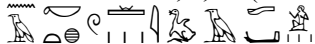
4. Hittite Treaty, 15 (= *KRI* II, 228, 3).



ir iw ky hrwy r n3 t3w n wsr-m3 t-r stp.n-r

‘If any enemy comes to the lands of Usermaatra-Setepenra.’

5. P. BM 10052, 5, 12 (= *KRI* VI, 780, 3).



n3 kthw it3w

‘The other thieves.’

6.2.2 Used as pronoun

6. P. BM 10052, 15, 7 (= *KRI* VI, 800, 12).



iw.i (m) mh 4 hmt t3 2.t mwt.tw kt nh.tw

‘Given that I am the fourth wife; the (first) two are dead, another is alive.’

7. P. Louvre E 27151, 8 (= *JEA* 64 (1978), pl. XIV).



inn m ky r(=i).di se n.k imi ptr.f se

‘If it is someone else who supplied it to you, let him see it.’

8. P. DM XXVIII, 10-11.



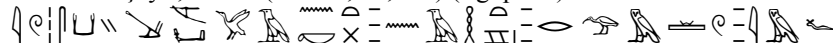
p[tr iw.i (r) dit] in.tw n.tn n3 kthw nty iw.i (r) šsp.[w]

‘Look, I will have sent to you the others that I will receive.’

6.3 *nkt*

Originally the meaning of this word was ‘thing, matter.’ In Late Egyptian its meaning became ‘(a) bit of,’ before a noun, and, after a verb, ‘something,’ if the sentence is affirmative, or ‘nothing, anything,’ if the sentence is negative.

9. P. Valençay I, v° 6-7 (= *RAD*, 73, 6-7) (fig. p. 30).



iw.w (hr) sk3 p3 nkt n šht r(=i).gm.w im.f

‘They cultivated the little field that they found there.’

10. P. ESP, A, 9-10 (= *KRI* VI, 517, 12-13).²⁰

‘As soon as my letter will reach you,



iw.tn ḥr wh3 n.i m nkt n msdmt

you will seek out for me a bit of galena.’

11. Hittite treaty, 13 (= *KRI* II, 227, 15).



iw bw iri p3 wr ʿ3 n ht3 th r p3 t3 n kmt r nhḥ r it3 nkt im.f

‘Without that the great chief of Hatti could ever invade the country of Egypt to take possession of anything there.’

12. P. BM 10053, v^o 3, 12 (= *KRI* VI, 760, 3).²¹



bw iri.tn dit n.i nkt

‘You never give me anything.’

13. P. Turin 1887, v^o 1, 5 (= *RAD*, 78, 12-13).



iw bwpw[y.f] ir(t) nkt r.w

‘Without him having done anything against them.’

14. P. DM XVI, v^o 1 (= *KRI* VI, 268, 4).



m ir dd nkt

‘Do not say anything!’

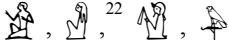
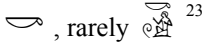

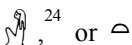


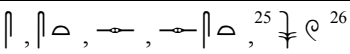

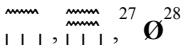

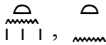


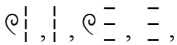

²⁰ Parallel example: O. Berlin P 11247, v^o 1 (= *KRI* III, 533, 5).

²¹ Parallel example: O. Prague 1826, 6 (= *HO*, 70, 2).

7. Personal pronouns

7.1 Suffix pronouns

7.1.1 Spellings

<i>Singular</i>	1 st	 or Ø (rare)	<i>.i</i>
	2 nd masc.	 , rarely  ²³	<i>.k</i>
	2 nd fem.	 , ²⁴ or 	<i>.t</i>
	3 rd masc.		<i>.f</i>
	3 rd fem.	 , ²⁵  ²⁶	<i>.s</i>
<i>Plural</i>	1 st	 , ²⁷  ²⁸	<i>.n</i> ²⁹
	2 nd		<i>.tn</i>
	3 rd (old form)	 , ³⁰  (very rare)	<i>.sn</i>
	3 rd (new form)		<i>.w</i>
<i>Impersonal</i>			<i>.tw</i>
		Ø	<i>.Ø</i>

7.1.2 Usage


After nouns: this usage is limited to some names where the suffix replaces the possessive;³¹


After prepositions;

After verbs: **subject** of verbal forms except the infinitive; **direct object** of the infinitive;³²

²² Note the two values – *.i* and *.t* – of .

²³ O. DM 554, 4.

²⁴ Note the two values – *.i* and *.t* – of .

²⁵ Often employed after the dative:  *n.s.*

²⁶ P. BM 10052, 14.

²⁷ Not to be confused with *n.n* (dative + pronoun).

²⁸ Following a word ending in *n*: P. BM 10052, 5, 13: *in. <w> t3 swht n hđ m t3 st* ‘We carried away the silver sarcophagus from the tomb.’

²⁹ Sometimes, following a feminine noun, it can be written as *tn*.

³⁰ P. Turin 1887, 2, 9.

³¹ Listed in Černý-Groll, *LEG*, §4.2.9, p. 60-66.

After converters: *iw* (circumstantial), *wn* (past), *wnn* (nominalisation).

7.2 Dependent pronouns

7.2.1 Spellings

<i>Singular</i>	1 st	⌚, ⌚, rarely ⌚, or Ø	<i>wi</i>
	2 nd masc.	⌚, ⌚	<i>tw</i>
	2 nd fem.	⌚, ⌚ ³³	<i>ti</i>
	3 rd masc.	⌚, ⌚	<i>sw</i>
	3 rd fem.	⌚	<i>st</i>
<i>Plural</i>	1 st	⌚	<i>n</i>
	2 nd	⌚, ⌚	<i>twn</i>
	3 rd	⌚, ⌚ (very rare) ³⁴	<i>sn</i>
	3 rd	⌚, ⌚	<i>st</i>

Note: all dependent pronouns of the third person, singular and plural, were pronounced *se* and the spellings ⌚, ⌚, ⌚, ⌚, etc. were employed indistinctly. These pronouns will be transliterated *se* whenever the writing encountered does not correspond to the theoretical spelling.

Do not confuse ⌚ = (w)i with the suffix .i, nor ⌚ = se is with the suffix .s.

Do not confuse *sw*, *st*, dependent pronouns with *sw*, *st*, the proclitic pronouns of the first present, see *infra* §16.1.1.

7.2.2 Usage

Direct object pronoun of all verbal forms, except the infinitive;

Subject of a number of nominal sentences with adjectival predicate (see *infra* §40.3), and of constructions of the same type expressing possession (see *infra* §41).

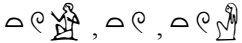




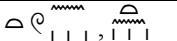
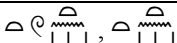

³² In this latter usage the suffix tends to be replaced by the new direct object pronouns, see §7.3.

³³ O. Petrie 62, 1.

³⁴ P. ESP, A, 12.

7.3 The new Direct Object pronouns³⁵

7.3.1 Spellings

Singular	1 st		<i>tw.i</i>
	2 nd masc.		<i>tw.k</i>
	2 nd fem.		<i>tw.t</i>
	3 rd masc.		<i>tw.f</i>
	3 rd fem.		<i>tw.s</i>
Plural	1 st		<i>tw.n</i>
	2 nd		<i>tw.tn</i>
	3 rd		<i>tw.w</i>

7.3.2 Origin

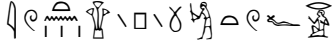
The new direct object pronouns derive from the combination of the morpheme *tw*, found after the determinative in the infinitive of some verbs when they are in the pronominal state (mark of the feminine *t*, or mark of the change of the last radical from *d*, *ḏ* or *ṭ* to *t*), with the suffix pronoun indicating the direct object. As a result, the combination *tw.f* came to be perceived as constituting the direct object pronoun itself, and its use was extended to other verbs.

In the imperative, the frequent presence of the reinforcing particle *tw*³⁶ led the dependent pronoun to be replaced by the new direct object pronoun to indicate the direct object.

7.3.3 Usage

Direct object after the infinitive. The following is an example with a strong verb which root does not end in *t*:

1. P. BM 10326, v^o 14 (= *LRL*, 20, 4-5).³⁷



iw.tn (r) h3p.tw.f r.i

‘You will conceal it from me.’

Direct object after the imperative. It is used especially with *rđi*, rarely with other verbs:

P. Cairo 58057, 6 (= *KRI* 1, 238, 11-12).



r-dd imi tw.f ‘Saying: “Give it.”’

3. Wenamun, 1, 37-38 (= *LES*, 65, 1).



i.rwiz tw.k (m) tzy.i mr(yt)

‘Remove yourself from my port.’

³⁵ See in the last instance Winand, *o. l.*, p. 98-100.

³⁶ Originally a second person singular, masculine, dependent pronoun. See Winand, *o. l.*, p. 156-160.

³⁷ On this passage see Wentz, *LRL*, p. 41, n. ac, with additional examples with strong verbs.

7.4 Independent pronouns

There are two series of independent pronouns that, with some exceptions, are not distinguished in writing in Late Egyptian, but become so in Coptic:

- the **tonic series**, which is **complete** and is employed in marked constructions (thematizations, cleft sentences, marked nominal sentences, and so on);
- the **atonic series**, which is limited to the **first two persons** and is used in unmarked constructions (unmarked nominal sentences, and so on).

In addition, some very old forms are still used in the 2nd and 3rd person singular to express possession.

7.4.1 Spelling


Old forms

2nd person singular common









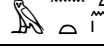

twt

3rd person singular common





swt



New forms³⁸



		Tonic Serie		Atonic Serie
Singular	1 st	<i>ink</i> (λNOK)		<i>inn</i> (λNĪ)
	2 nd masc.	<i>ntk</i> (N̄TOK)		<i>ntk</i> (N̄TK̄) ⁴⁰
	2 nd fem.	<i>ntt</i> (N̄TO)		<i>ntt</i> (N̄TE)
	3 rd masc.	<i>ntf</i> (N̄TOϥ)		//////
	3 rd fem.	<i>nts</i> (N̄TOC)		//////
Plural	1 st	<i>inn</i> (λNON)		<i>inn</i> (λNĪ)
	2 nd	<i>nttn</i> (N̄TΩTĪ)		<i>nttn</i> (N̄TETĪ) ⁴²
	3 rd	<i>ntw</i> (N̄TOOY)		//////

³⁸ The spellings used in the table are those of the tonic series. They are homogeneous and all persons are represented therein.

³⁹ Variants: , etc.

⁴⁰ Rare atonic form:  (P. BN 197, VI, 8 = *LRL*, 64, 10). Note the similarity with the spelling of the conjunctive.

⁴¹ Rare anomalous spellings:  (O. Petrie 61, 3 = *HO*, 23, 4),  (O. Nash 1, 7 = *KRI* IV, 315, 16).

⁴² Rare atonic forms:  (P. Turin 2026, 4 = *LRL*, 71, 14), and  (*KRI* II, 110, 3).

7.4.2 Usage

Subject or predicate of a nominal sentence (see *infra* §39);

predicate of a sentence expressing possession (see *infra* §41);

attribute (with the sense of ‘to me, to you, etc.’ (see *infra* §41.4);

marked rheme in nominal sentences (see *infra* §39.3), **or cleft sentences** (see *infra* §42);

marked theme (see *infra* §33.4.1, example 21, and §39.2.1.2, examples 2, 3 and 4);

strengtheners of another pronoun, often preceded by **gr**:

4. P. Mayer B, 5-6 (= *KRI* VI, 515, 12-13).















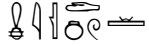




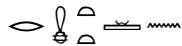


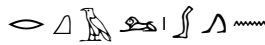









iw.n (hr) dd n.f iw.n (r) itzy.k <r> p3 gm.n st im mtw.k in n.k gr ntk

‘We said to him: “We will take you there where we found (the silver objects) and you will carry away (some) for you(rself), too.”’

8. Prepositions

Below are listed the typical Late Egyptian prepositions, and those with slightly confusing spellings. For the others the reader should refer to the conventional grammars and dictionaries.








	irm	‘with, and, together with,’ replaces <i>hn^c</i>
	wis.tw	‘apart from, not to say, besides’
	m	‘in,’ var.:  ; before a suffix:  ,  or  
	m-hmt	‘without, without the knowledge of’
	m-di	‘with, in possession of’ derives from  <i>m-^c</i> , and can be written  ; note: <i>m-dr</i> is still used and can be written 
	m-drt	‘through’
	mi-qd	‘as, like’
	r	‘towards;’ before a suffix: 
	r-iwd	‘between, since, in charge of’
	r-^cq3	‘opposite, vis-à-vis’
	r-mitt-n	‘in accordance with’
	r-š3^c-m	‘since, for, from’ ⁴³
	r-š3^c-r	‘until’ ⁴⁴
	r-qr-n	‘next to, near, against (jur.)’ var.:    
	r-db3	‘in exchange for, in place of, against’
	hn^c	‘with, and;’ var.:  old form replaced by irm

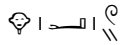
⁴³ Not to be confused with the following preposition.

⁴⁴ Not to be confused with the previous preposition.




hr

‘on;’ before a suffix:  |  | ,  |  ,
or  |  |  |



hr-^{wy}

‘in charge of;’ abbreviated as 






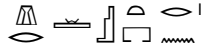
hr-d3d3-n

‘on top of’



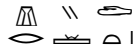
hr

‘under;’    | before a suffix



hr-st-r(3)-n

‘because, due to, instead of’



hr-drt

‘under the responsibility of’

9. Adverbs

Below are listed the most common adverbs and adverbial phrases.

	ʒs	‘quickly, immediately’ ⁴⁵
	im	‘there, down there, from there’ var. ,
	ʿn	‘once more, again, already, more, also, further’ ⁴⁶
	ʿqʒ	‘exactly, precisely, correctly’
	m-mitt	‘likewise, similarly, in the same way’
	m-rʿ	‘again, also’
	m-dwn	‘regularly, usually’ ⁴⁷
	minʒ	‘like this, in this way’
	r-iqr	‘very’
	r-bl	‘outside’ ⁴⁸
	r-mitt	‘likewise, similarly, in the same way’
	gr	‘again, further, also’
	tnw	‘where? where from?’
	dy	‘here, there (new form)’
	dri	‘completely, conscientiously, severely, carefully, thoroughly’

⁴⁵ Often with *sp-sn*.

⁴⁶ Coptic **ON**.

⁴⁷ Often with *sp-sn*.

⁴⁸ Coptic **ΕΒΟΛ**.

10. Particles

Particles are distinguished from prepositions by their position, almost always a proclitic one, before various forms (verbal or nominal, independent or not). They are never found before a simple nominal syntagma.

10.1 *hr*

It coordinates an utterance with the preceding one, and it is never found in an initial position. It is translated by a coordinating conjunction ‘and, but, or, so ...’⁴⁹

10.2 *ir*

Signals a marked order (fronting of a syntagma or of a clause) and can be found in an initial position. It is either left untranslated or rendered by ‘as for, if ...’⁵⁰

10.3 *p3wn*

It has, above all, an explanatory or causal value (‘because, since, for’). It is no longer found in texts after the nineteenth dynasty, and it never appears in an initial position.

10.4 *y3*; var.: , , , etc.

It is used to strengthen a clause, and has two main uses:

- to reinforce a question, usually introduced by *ih*, and can be found both in initial and non-initial position (it is rendered as ‘truly, indeed’);
- to reinforce an assertion, having, most often, an explanatory or supporting value (rendered as ‘because, since, for’), and it is found in non-initial position, especially in the twentieth dynasty after the disappearance of *p3wn*.⁵¹

10.5 *mk* (old), or *ptr* (new)

‘See, look:’ awakens or maintains the attention of the message’s recipient (‘phatic’ function), while presenting him this message as immediately verifiable.

- Only *hr* and *ir* are found in a narrative context;
- *hr* can precede *ir*, *ptr*, or *mk*, but not *y3*;
- *y3* can precede *ir*, but not *hr*, *ptr* or *mk*;
- only *ir* can be preceded by *ptr* or *mk*.

⁴⁹ See Neveu, *SAK* Beihefte, Band 3 (1989), 99-110.

⁵⁰ See *infra* §33.1.

⁵¹ See Neveu, *SEAP* 11 (1992), 13-30.

11. Other common morphemes

11.1 Negative morphemes⁵²

Classical Egyptian		Late Egyptian		Coptic
	n		bw	Ḳ̄
	nn		bn	Ḳ̄
	(n...iṣ)⁵³		bn ... iwn3	Ḳ̄...ⲁN
	tm		tm	ṬḲ̄

11.2 Interrogative morphemes⁵⁴

11.2.1 Interrogative particles

in, common spelling: ; rarer spellings: , or

is(t): , or

11.2.2 Interrogative pronouns

	ih	what? (things)
	nim	who? (persons)
	it	which? (very rare)

11.2.3 Interrogative adverb







tnw or **tnw** where? whence?

⁵² See *infra* §38.5.

⁵³ This is only the ‘functional’ predecessor of the discontinuous negative morphemes *bn ... iwn3*, not its ancestor.

⁵⁴ See *infra* §43.

11.3 Converters

<i>Past</i> ⁵⁵		<i>wn</i>
<i>Circumstantial</i> ⁵⁶	 or 	<i>iw</i>
<i>Relative converter</i> ⁵⁷	 	<i>nty</i>
<i>Nominalisation converter</i> ⁵⁸		<i>wnn</i>

⁵⁵ See *infra* §38.4.

⁵⁶ See *infra* §32.

⁵⁷ See *infra* §29.

⁵⁸ See *infra* §34 and §38.4.

Handwritten text in a cursive script, likely a historical document or manuscript. The text is arranged in approximately 12 horizontal lines, with some lines starting with a large initial letter. The script is dense and characteristic of early modern European handwriting. The text is enclosed in a simple rectangular border.

P. Valençay I, v° (cf. p. 17)

PART TWO

SYNTAX

Handwritten text in an ancient script, likely Pahlavi, on a fragment of parchment. The text is arranged in approximately 15 horizontal lines. The script is dense and characteristic of the Sassanid period. On the right margin, there are numerical markers: '15', '20', and '25', which likely correspond to line numbers or folio numbers in a larger manuscript. The parchment shows signs of age, including some staining and irregular edges.

P. Adoption, r° II, 15-26 (cf. p. 178)

12. Fundamental notions

A Late Egyptian utterance consists of units called ‘forms’ that can be nominal or verbal.⁵⁹

12.1 Autonomy

A Late Egyptian form, verbal or nominal, is called **independent** if it **can** constitute in itself a complete sentence. It takes its temporal value, if it has one, from the register where the utterance⁶⁰ is found, and from its morphological characteristics.

A Late Egyptian form, verbal or nominal, is called **subordinate (non-autonomous)** if it **cannot** constitute, in itself, a complete sentence. It has to lean on another form, independent or not, that most often precedes it, but may also follow it.

Its temporal value depends both on the register of the utterance and on the other forms with which it is necessarily connected.

- Although some forms are (intrinsically) non-independent, it is also possible to convert an independent form into a non-independent one by using a specific morpheme, called ‘converter,’ placed at the beginning of the form. For example: *iw*, *wnn*, *nty*, *m-dr*, *inn*, etc.
- Two subordinate forms that depend on one another can constitute an independent utterance (of higher order). For example, the correlative systems *wnn.f hr sdm* / *iw.f hr (tm) sdm*, see *infra* §34.

12.2 ‘Initiality’⁶¹

A Late Egyptian form, either verbal or nominal, is called **initial** if it is **can** to stand in an initial position, that is to say, at the beginning of a text, or after various expressions (often using the verb *dd*) indicating the beginning of direct speech, which are called direct indicators of initiality: *r-nty*, *r-dd*, *hn^c dd*, *ky-dd*, *dd.f*, *iw.f hr dd*, etc.

A Late Egyptian form, either verbal or nominal, is called **non-initial** if it **can never appear** in an initial position, or after direct indicators of initiality.

- Any independent form is an initial one, but the converse is not true, since there are initial non-independent forms (for example the construction *wnn.f hr sdm* cited above §12.1).

12.3 The enunciation⁶²

The enunciation is a complex phenomenon that testifies to the way in which the speaker ‘appropriates the language’ to organise it into a discourse. In so doing, he is led to place himself in relation to his *interlocutor*, in relation to *his surroundings*, and in relation to *what he states*.

In Late Egyptian, the enunciation is crossed by two oppositions, one affecting its tools, and the other its registers.

⁵⁹ ‘Un énoncé est ou nominal ou verbal.’ Benveniste, *Problèmes de linguistique générale*, I, p. 157.

⁶⁰ See *infra* §12.3.2.

⁶¹ Černý-Groll, *LEG*, 10, p. 154-179, especially §10.10-11, p. 164-169.

⁶² See Benveniste, *Problèmes de linguistique générale*, I, 1966, p. 238-243 and 255-256; Doret, *Narrative*, 1986, p. 13-14; Vernus, *DE* 9 (1987), 100-102.

12.3.1 The tools of the enunciation: narrative and non-narrative forms

Among the forms constituting an enunciation, some are objective, limited, and, if they possess a specific temporality, they express the past. They thus allow, in their succession, to **relate past events in an objective, punctual⁶³ and chronological manner, and this without relation to the time of the enunciation.** The events thus reported are, therefore, presented as being outside the sphere of the speaker's immediate interest, or, if one prefers, as not belonging to his *hic et nunc* (= *here and now*).

Such forms will be called '**narrative forms**,' and the sentences, of which they constitute the framework (and within which can be placed parenthetical clauses), that satisfy all the characteristics listed above, will be called '**narrative passages**' or '**narrative**.'⁶⁴

The narrative forms include: the *sdm.f* perfective, the sequential, the forms *wn.in.f hr sdm*, *ḥc.n.f hr sdm*, and *ḥc.n sdm.f*, some forms of the first present, and so on.⁶⁵

Forms that do not possess the above properties, and/or that are employed with marks of the *hic et nunc*, will be called '**non-narrative forms**,' and the utterances in which they figure will be called '**non-narrative passages**.'

Among the non-narrative forms, while some are objective – third future, first present, *sdm.f* perfective, etc. – others are subjective – prospective, negative aorist, imperative, conjunctive, second tense, cleft sentences, etc.

▪ As can be seen from the above list, some objective, punctual forms expressing the past, such as the perfective *sdm.f*,⁶⁶ or the first present having as predicate the pseudo-participle of an intransitive verb,⁶⁷ can function as either narrative or non-narrative forms. It is the context that allows one to determine the nature of the passage.⁶⁸ For example, *sw iw* is rendered as 'he came,' if it is accompanied by other narrative forms (such as the sequential), but it is translated as 'he has come' (and he is still there) within the construction *ptr sw iw*, which shows a mark of the *hic et nunc*.

12.3.2 The registers of the enunciation: narrative and discourse

12.3.2.1 The narrative

The (historical) narrative is an utterance that recounts past events **without any intervention by the speaker**. Its framework consists of a succession of **narrative forms in the third person**.⁶⁹ It may, of course, contain parenthetical clauses and discourse quotations.

12.3.2.2 The discourse

The discourse is an utterance in which a **speaker addresses a listener** (real or imagined) whom he seeks to influence in some way. **Non-narrative forms** (non-narrative passages)⁷⁰ and

⁶³ 'Punctual' understood here as 'specific to a point in time.'

⁶⁴ The use of this term is complex: the narration is not in opposition to the narrative or the discourse, which belong to another type of opposition, but to the 'non narration,' that is to say, to the 'non-narrative' passages.

⁶⁵ Narrative forms, being punctual, cannot be used to describe repeated or habitual events, for which non-narrative forms, like the conjunctive, are used. For example, the beginning of the 'Story of the two brothers' (P. Orbiney, 1, 3-9). See Wenté, *JNES* 21 (1961), 304-311.

⁶⁶ See below §15.

⁶⁷ See below §16.6.2.

⁶⁸ Presence of other narrative forms or narrative indicators, like *hrw pn* 'this day,' *hr ir hr-sz 10 n hrw* 'and, ten days later,' in the case of narrative passages; presence of non-narrative forms or marks of the *hic et nunc* as *p3 hrw* 'today,' *10 n hrw r p3y* 'ten days ago,' and *ptr* 'look,' in the other case.

⁶⁹ Or better to the 'non person,' see Benveniste *o.c.*, p. 256.

⁷⁰ Or 'narrative in discourse.'

narrative forms (narrative passages) are found in **all persons**. The discourse can be introduced by specific expressions called direct indicators of initiality (see above §12.2), and be closed by other, equally specific, indicators called ‘verbs of discourse closure:’ *i.n.f* (past), *kz.f* (future), *hr.f* (temporally neutral).

- While the framework of the narrative is always a narration in the third person, the discourse may contain narrative passages (narration within a discourse, without restriction on persons) or non-narrative passages.
- Some narrative forms are common to both discourse and narration (sequential, some forms of the first present), while others are specific to the narrative (*wn.in.f hr sdm*, *‘h^c.n sdm.f*, etc.).
- The use of non-narrative forms in narration, such as the conjunctive, is an effect of style. For example in P. Salt 124 (denunciation of the misdeeds of Paneb), and P. Turin 1887 (Elephantine’s scandal), where some of the past events are denounced subjectively.

12.4 The strategy of the enunciation

12.4.1 The theory of the three points of view⁷¹

A sentence, that is to say, an utterance that is grammatically complete, meaningfully interpretable and delimited by intonation,⁷² may be regarded from three points of view:

- **morphosyntactic** point of view: according to the functions fulfilled by the terms of the sentence, we can distinguish a **subject** (even a zero subject), a **predicate** and, where required, complements;
- **semantic** point of view: the sentence consists of one or more **participants** (agent, patient), of a **process**, and optionally of beneficiaries, and/or of circumstants;
- **strategic** point of view or **enunciative**: the sentence always contains only two parts, which do not convey the same amount of information: the **theme** is presented as the **least informative** element, while the **rheme** is presented as the **most informative** element of the sentence.

Example: *The lion roars*. In this sentence, *the lion* is at the same time subject, actor (agent) and theme, while *roars* corresponds to the predicate, the process and the rheme.

It should be noted that even if a correspondence frequently exists between subject, actor and theme on the one hand, and predicate, process and rheme on the other, it is not always so.

12.4.2 The strategic or enunciative point of view

Terminology

If theme and rheme are primarily defined as the former being less informative than the latter, other properties contrast them in general terms. Thus the theme is often presented as ‘that about which one is going to say something,’ the ‘support’ or the ‘given,’ the rheme then being ‘what is said about the theme,’ the ‘apport’ or the ‘new information.’ The following are the main terms used to designate theme and rheme:

⁷¹ See Hagège, *La structure des langues*, 1982, p. 27-54; *L’homme de paroles*, 1985, p. 207-233.

⁷² Thus excluding ‘emotional’ statements like ‘Get out!’ ‘Cheers!’ etc.

Theme	Rheme
Support	Apport (contribution)
Presupposed	Comment(ary)
Dictum	Modus
Given	New
Topic	Focus

- It was thought preferable to reserve the last two terms to marked theme and marked rheme respectively (see below).

Marked and unmarked utterances⁷³

An utterance is said **unmarked** if it satisfies the statistical affinities subject-theme and predicate-rheme, and is devoid of any syntactic wording **explicitly** designating one of its components as the theme or the rheme. Such an utterance is described as plain sentence (*Fr.* phrase plane). See the following examples in English and Late Egyptian:

- ‘I have my meals at the restaurant.’
- **di.i ḥmt dbn 40 r pzy.i ʿz*: ‘I paid (lit. ‘gave’) 40 copper debens for my donkey.’

An utterance is said to be **marked** if the statistical affinities subject-theme and predicate-rheme are not satisfied (the subject then corresponds to the rheme and the predicate to the theme), or if either the theme or the rheme are explicitly designated by an *ad hoc* syntactic process.⁷⁴

The term ‘**topic**’ is used to designate a **marked theme**, and the entire syntactic process establishing an element of the plain sentence as topic or marked theme will be called ‘**topicalisation**’ or ‘**thematisation**.’

- ‘My meals, I have them at the restaurant’ → Topicalisation of the direct object pronoun;
- ‘Me, I have my meals at the restaurant’ → Topicalisation of the subject.

In Late Egyptian the topicalisation of any nominal element in a plain sentence *can be done* by anteposing the element in question and having the particle *ir* precede it. The element thus topicalised is then referred back to by a pronoun in the ‘comment’ (see *infra* §33.4 and §39):

- * *ir ink / di.i ḥmt dbn 40 r pzy.i ʿz*
‘As for me, I have paid 40 copper debens for my donkey’ → Topicalisation of the subject;
- *ir pzy.i ʿz / di.i ḥmt dbn 40 r.*⁷⁵
‘As for my donkey, I paid 40 copper debens for it’ → Topicalisation of a noun object of a preposition.

⁷³ See Vernus, *LingAeg* 1 (1991), 334-335.

⁷⁴ Since Late Egyptian is a dead language, nothing will be said here about processes involving intonation.

⁷⁵ O. Berlin P 1121, v^o 1 (= *KRI* v, 525, 1).

Note that such a process results in an embedded construction. For example: *ir pꜣy.i ʕꜣ* (marked theme 1 = topic) / *dī.i ḥmt dbn 40 r.f* (rheme 1 or comment), the rheme 1 *dī.i ḥmt dbn 40 r.f* being itself structured in theme 2 reduced to the suffix *.i*, while all the rest constitutes the rheme 2.⁷⁶

Similarly, the term ‘**focus**’ will apply to the **marked rheme**, and the entire syntactic process setting up an element of the plain sentence as focus, or marked rheme, will be referred to as ‘**focalisation**’ or ‘**rhematisation**:’

- ‘It is in the restaurant that I have my meals’ → Focalisation of the adverbial;
- ‘It is I who has (my) meals at the restaurant’ → Focalisation of the subject;
- ‘It is my meals that I have at the restaurant’ → Focalisation of the direct object pronoun.

In Late Egyptian, the focalisation of an adverbial element (adverbial) of a plain sentence is achieved by means of the **second tenses** (see *infra* §23):

- **i.iri.i dīt ḥmt dbn 40 / r pꜣy.i ʕꜣ*
‘It is for my donkey that I paid 40 copper debens’ → Focalisation of the adverbial.

On the other hand, the focalisation of a nominal element is achieved by means of **cleft sentences** (see *infra* §42):

- **ink / i.dī ḥmt dbn 40 r pꜣy.i ʕꜣ*
‘It is I who paid 40 copper debens for my donkey’ → Focalisation of the subject;
- **ḥmt dbn 40 / pꜣ dī.i r pꜣy.i ʕꜣ*
‘It is 40 copper debens that I paid for my donkey’ → Focalisation of the direct object pronoun.

Remark. Topicalisation and focalisation are by no means mutually exclusive:

- ‘My Brother won the race’ → Plain sentence;
- ‘My brother, it is him who won the race’ → Topicalisation and focalisation of the subject;
- ‘The race, it is my brother who won it’ → Topicalisation of the direct object pronoun and focalisation of the subject;
- ‘The race, my brother, it is him who won it’ → Topicalisation of the direct object pronoun first, then of the subject, and focalisation of the subject.

⁷⁶ See Hagège, *L'homme de paroles*, p. 226.

The same is true in Late Egyptian:

– *ir p3w iryt nb ntw i.iri se*⁷⁷

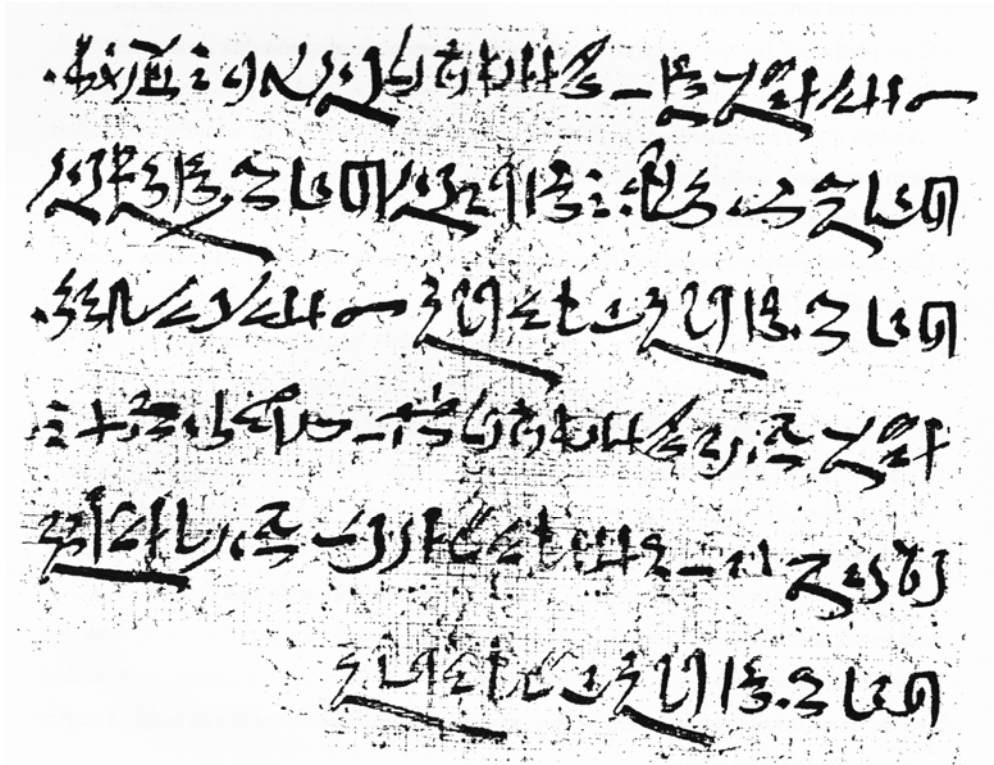
‘As for all that has been done, it is they who have done it: → Topicalisation of the direct object pronoun and focalisation of the subject of a verbal sentence.

The structure of the passage is the following: *ir p3w iryt nb* (marked theme 1 = topic) / *ntw i.iri se* (rheme 1 = comment), the latter being subdivided into *ntw* (marked rheme 2 = focus) / *i.iri se* (theme 2).

– *ir imn-r^c nsw ntrw ntf p3 nb n p3 ʿnh snb*⁷⁸

‘As for Amun-Ra, king of the gods, it is him, the lord of life and health’ → Topicalisation and focalisation of the subject of a nominal sentence.

As before: *imn-r^c nsw ntrw* (marked theme 1 = topic) / *ntf p3 nb n p3 ʿnh snb* (rheme 1), with rheme 1 consisting of: *ntf* (marked rheme 2 = focus) / *p3 nb n p3 ʿnh snb* (theme 2).



P. Northumberland I, v^o 3-8 (cf. p. 110)

⁷⁷ P. Turin 1875, 3, 1 (= *KRI* V, 351, 6-7). Plain sentence: **iri.w p3w iryt nb*.

⁷⁸ Wenamun, 2, 30-31 (= *LES*, 70, 1-2). A sentence simply topicalised: **hr ir imn-r^c nsw ntrw / p3 nb n p3 ʿnh snb p3y* (the plain sentence is uncommon).

VERBAL SYSTEM

Handwritten text in a cursive script, likely a medieval manuscript. The text is arranged in approximately 13 horizontal lines. The script is dense and somewhat difficult to decipher due to its cursive nature and the texture of the parchment. There are some markings that resemble numbers or symbols interspersed within the lines. On the right side of the page, there are two small numbers, '5' and '10', which likely indicate line numbers or folio numbers. The parchment shows signs of age, including some staining and wear.

13. The infinitive

The infinitive is the nominal form of the verb, and is neutral with regard to the diathesis.⁷⁹

13.1 Morphology⁸⁰

Infinitives of verbs that were feminine in Middle Egyptian (3ae-*inf.*, caus. 2-*lit.*, *rdi*, *iw*, *iy*, *ini*) generally retain the *t*. Sometimes a *t* is added without reason to the infinitives of verbs that were masculine in the classical stage of the language.

In the absolute⁸¹ and the construct⁸² state the Δ *t* is placed before any determinative.

In the pronominal⁸³ state, the ending takes the form Δ^Q *tw*,⁸⁴ and is placed after the determinative. When combined with a suffix, the resulting morpheme is *tw.f*, which is at the origin of the ‘new direct object pronoun’ (see *supra* §7.3).

13.2 Syntax

Infinitives are almost always treated as masculine regardless of their class.⁸⁵

The direct object of the infinitive, if there is one, and it is pronominal, is indicated by a suffix,⁸⁶ which tends to be replaced by the ‘new direct object pronoun.’

The infinitive is negated with the negative verb *tm*.

If the agent of the process is expressed, it can be introduced by the preposition *in* (see *infra* §13.4.1.2); it can correspond to the subject of the relative form of the verb *iri*, if the infinitive is periphrased (see *infra* §13.3, 13.4.1.1, 13.4.2.1.1); or it can be expressed by a possessive (see *infra* §13.4.2.2.2).

Important remarks: verbs with four (4-*lit.*) or more radicals, have only the infinitive (and, possibly, the pseudo-participle), while in all other forms, these verbs are periphrased using the auxiliary *iri*, which is conjugated in the correct form and is followed by the infinitive of the verbal expression.

13.3 Aspectual value

The infinitive takes the marked aspectual value of a **perfective** when it is periphrased using the perfective relative form of the verb *iri*: *i.iri.f* or *i.iri N* (that sometimes is still found in its old form: *ir.n.f* or *ir.n N*). Otherwise, the infinitive has the unmarked value of an **imperfect**.

13.4 Usage

The infinitive is employed mainly in **grammaticalised verbal forms**, such as the first present, the third future, the second tense, the continuative forms, the negative aorist, and so on (see *infra*), and in some cleft sentences (see *infra* §42). Besides the abovementioned forms, it is also found in predicative and non-predicative usages.

⁷⁹ Or ‘voice’ (active or passive).

⁸⁰ See Winand, *Morphologie*, p. 90-101.

⁸¹ An infinitive not immediately followed by a direct object.

⁸² An infinitive followed by a nominal direct object.

⁸³ An infinitive followed by a pronominal direct object.

⁸⁴ Variant *ti*.

⁸⁵ Rare exceptions: *h3b*, *it3* ... they can be preceded by the article *t3*.

⁸⁶ Rare exceptions in the 3rd person masculine; Gardiner, *EG*, §300.

13.4.1 Predicative usage

The infinitive can be employed as an independent narrative⁸⁷ form within the narrative framework. It is found in the perfective and the imperfect.

13.4.1.1 Perfective

The process, in which the agent is expressed by the subject of the relative form, is identified as perfective by the speaker.



P. Northumberland I, 2 (*cf.* p. 59)

1. O. Cairo 25530, 1-3 (= *KRI* v, 542, 10-11);⁸⁸ *cf.* example 1 above.

ḥsbt 29 ḥbd 2 prt sw 10 hrw pn n *sn* ir.n t3 ist t3 inb(t) hr p3y.w diw

‘Year 29, second month of the winter season, day 10, this day when the wall was crossed⁸⁹ by the crew, because of its⁹⁰ rations’ (*lit.* ‘this day of crossing that the crew did (of) the wall ...’). Note the old relative form.

2. Wenamun, 1, 2 (= *LES*, 61, 3-5).

ḥsbt 5 ḥbd 4 šmw sw 16 hrw (pn) n wd i.iri W r in t3 tt-ḥt n p3 wi3 3 špsy n imn-r^c nsw ntrw

‘Year 5, fourth month of the summer season, day 16, (this) day when W set off to fetch the timber for the great and noble barque of Amun-Ra, king of the gods’ (*lit.* ‘this day of departing that W did ...’). The structure is as follows:⁹¹

Infinitive + *ir.n* / *i.iri* + agent⁹² + (direct object pronoun) + (prepositional phrase)

⁸⁷ Gardiner, *EG*, §306, 2.

⁸⁸ Another example is found in a Graffito of year 47 of Ramses II (= *KRI* III, 148, 4-6).

⁸⁹ *sn* became *sḥ* following the confusion in hieratic between the signs ◯, ∞ and ∞ on one hand, and ◯ on the other.

⁹⁰ *Lit.* ‘their’ agreeing, semantically, with the collective *ist* ‘crew.’


⁹¹ For the origin of this sentence see Gardiner, *EG*, §392: *sḍm pw ir.n.f.*

⁹² Identical to the subject of the relative.

13.4.1.2 Imperfect

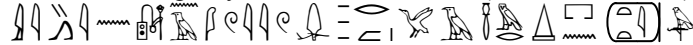
The speaker takes no position in the fulfilment of the process.

3. P. Turin 1880, 1, 1 (= *RAD*, 52, 14-15); cf. example 1 above.


hsbt 29 3bd 2 prt sw 10 hrw pn (n) sn t3 5 inbt n p3 hr in t3 ist

‘Year 29, second month of the winter season, day 10, this day, (of) passing the five guard posts of the Tomb by the crew’ (*lit.* ‘this day (of) passing the five booths ...’).

4. Graffito of regnal year 34 of Ramses II, 3 (= *KRI* III, 436, 8-9).


iy in sš n3-šwy r-gs p3 mr n tti

‘Arrival of the scribe Neshuy near the pyramid of Teti’ (*lit.* ‘Coming by the scribe Neshuy ...’).

The structure this time is:

Infinitive + (direct object pronoun) + *in* + agent + (prepositional phrase)

The agent can be unexpressed:

5. P. Turin 1880, 1, 5 (= *RAD*, 53, 2-3).⁹³



wrš m st tn

‘Spending the day in this place.’

Remark. A clause having an infinitive as predicate can function as the direct object of a verb.

6. Qadesh Bulletin, 65-67 (= *KRI* II, 115, 9-14), Luxor text:



iw bw rs n3y.i mr h3swt hn^c n3y.i wrw dd n.n st iw

‘Without that neither my chiefs of foreign countries nor my officials were able to say to us: “They have come.”’

13.4.2 Non-predicative usage

13.4.2.1 Noun phrase

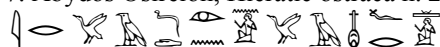
13.4.2.1.1 Perfective

The infinitive, defined by the article, is periphrased by the relative form of *iri* which subject denotes the agent of the process.⁹⁴

⁹³ Another example is P. Mayer A, 3-6 (= *KRI* VI, 808, 15-16).

⁹⁴ If, which is very rare, the agent is unexpressed, the passive participle replaces the relative form. Example: P. Turin 1887, 1, 7 (= *RAD* 74, 15) *sh3 r p3 t3wt i.iry(t) w^c wd3* ‘Denunciation concerning the theft that was perpetrated of an udjat-eye.’

7. Abydos Osireion, Hieratic ostraca n. 2 (= *KRI* I, 128, 14).



ir p3 dd ir.n n.i p3-nfr

‘As for the statement that Panefer made to me ...’ or ‘As for what Panefer said to me ...’

Note again the classical relative form.

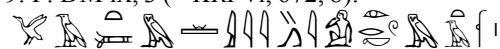
8. P. DM VIII, 1 (= *KRI* VI, 671, 5).



hr ir p3 h3b i.tri.k hr t3 mdt n t3 m3st

‘And, as for what you have written (*lit.* ‘the sending which you did’) concerning the matter of the maset⁹⁶ ...’

9. P. DM IX, 3 (= *KRI* VI, 672, 8).



p3 tm ty i.tri.k m t3 rnp't

‘The fact that you have not come this year’ (*lit.* ‘The not coming that you have done ...’).

13.4.2.1.2 Imperfect

The infinitive is defined by the possessive adjective, which also denotes the agent of the process; there is no nominal agent:

p3y.f sdm

10. O. DM 552, v° 1-2 (fig. p. 45).



hr ir p3y.k dd

‘And, as for what you say ...’ (*lit.* ‘And, as for your saying ...’).

11. O. Ashmolean 1945-37, 15 (= *KRI* II, 381, 11-12).



y3 ih p3y.s wstn p3 wd3 n pr-3 3.w.s. m-hm.se

‘Well, what is the meaning of her striding freely the warehouse of Pharaoh l.p.h. without their knowledge?’⁹⁷ (*lit.* ‘Now, what is her act of walking freely ...?’).

13.4.2.2 Prepositional phrase

The prepositions most often encountered are *r*, *hr*, *m*.

⁹⁵ Or *p3 sdm ir.n.f*, *p3 sdm ir.n N*, relative forms of the classical type.

⁹⁶ See Černý, *JEA* 31 (1945), 39.

⁹⁷ Unbeknownst to the officials of the warehouse.

12. Graffito of regnal year 47 of Ramses II, 1 (= *KRI* III, 148, 4-6).



hsbt 47 ʒbd 2 prt sw 25 iy ir.n sš pr-hd hd-nht sʒ swl mwt.f tʒ-wsr(t) r swtwt sdʒy-hr hr imntt mn-nfr

‘Year 47, second month of the winter season, day 25, arrival of the treasury scribe Hednakht son of Sul, whose mother is Tawesert, to walk and enjoy himself in the west of Memphis’ (*lit.* ‘coming that the treasury scribe Hednakht did ... his mother is Tawesert ...’).

13. P. Turin 1887, 1, 13 (= *RAD*, 75, 12-13).



iw.tw (hr) dit n.f ʿnh n nb ʿ.w.s. r tm ʿq r hwt-ntr

‘An oath by the Lord l.p.h. was imposed on him to not enter the temple.’

14. P. DM II, 1 (= *KRI* VI, 259, 13): statement heading.



r⁹⁸ dit rh.tw pʒ diw i.di.f n.i

‘List of the rations that he gave to me’ (*lit.* ‘To cause that one knows the ration ...’).

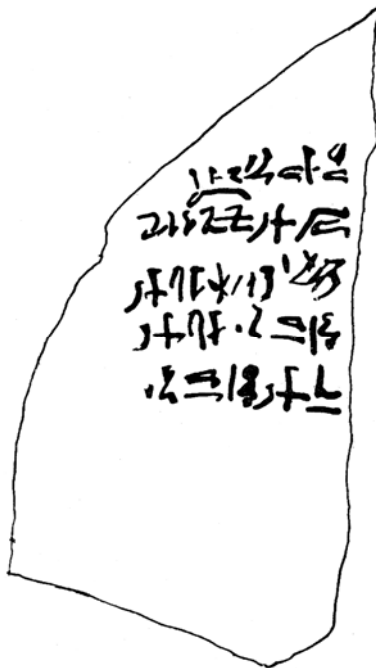
15. P. Phillipps, v^o 6-7 (= *LRL*, 30, 8-9).



hr bw iri.i nni m itʒ n.f mw

‘And I never neglect to take water to him’ (*lit.* ‘And I am never negligent in bringing water to him’).

O. DM 552, v^o (cf. p. 44)



⁹⁸ Read

14. The Pseudo-participle







































The pseudo-participle⁹⁹ is the adverbial form of the verb.

14.1 Morphology¹⁰⁰

In Late Egyptian the pseudo-participle is only used in sentences where it is always preceded by its subject. As a result, the endings are no longer pertinent, and tend to be simplified, or even disappear.

- Thus one goes from a system with five suffixes in use during the 19th dynasty: **k** (1st sg.); **tw** (2nd sg. and pl.); **ti** (3rd f. sg.); **n** (1st pl.); **Ø** (3rd m. sg. and pl.);
- to a system with three suffixes in the 20th dynasty: **k** (1st sg.); **tw** (1st pl. and 2nd sg. and pl.); **Ø** (3rd sg. and pl.);
- to a system with only two suffixes during the 21st dynasty: **tw** (1st and 2nd sg. and pl.); **Ø** (3rd sg. and pl.).

Table of suffixes and spellings

Singular	1 st	k    or    ¹⁰¹ , later t   , (Ø rare)
	2 nd masc.	t   or   (rare), (Ø rare)
	2 nd fem.	t  
	3 rd masc.	Ø or y   (3rd inf.), (t   very rare)
	3 rd fem.	t   or   , (Ø rarer)
Plural	1 st	n    or    ¹⁰¹ , later t   or Ø
	2 nd	t   (or  ), or Ø
	3 rd	Ø or y   (3rd inf.), (t   rare)

14.2 Values

The fundamental value of the pseudo-participle is that of a **resultative perfective**.

- In the case of **intransitive verbs**, it describes a durable **state**, resulting from the completion of a preceding process, and has full **resultative** value.¹⁰²
- This nuance contrasts, in adjective verbs (*Fr.* verbes de qualité), with the stative value expressed by the adjectival construction. Thus: **sw nfr* ‘it has become good; it has improved; it has been improved,’ but **nfr sw* ‘it is good’ (intrinsically). In practice, the difference tends to disappear because the adjectival construction fell into disuse, being no longer used except with a very small number of adjectives.

⁹⁹ Also called ‘old perfective, stative or qualitative.’

¹⁰⁰ See Winand, *o.l.*, p. 103-149, especially 123-124.

¹⁰¹ The full form predominates in the 19th dynasty, while the short form is used mainly in the 20th.

¹⁰² Except in a narrative context, see *infra* §16.6.2.

– In the case of **transitive verbs**,¹⁰³ it expresses a **passive perfective**.

▪ This is not a simple passive. The distinction is important in the case of verbs with a non-terminative *Aktionsart*.¹⁰⁴ ‘he is questioned’ is equivalent to ‘he is being questioned’ (**tw.tw hr smtr.f*) and does not have the same value as ‘he has been questioned’ (**sw smtr*). In other cases the nuance is barely perceptible: ‘he is found’ ≈ ‘he has been found.’

14.3 Usage

The pseudo-participle is always employed in the context of the nominal sentence with adverbial predicate: **subject + pseudo-participle**.

14.3.1 With a proper subject, in grammaticalised verbal forms

The pseudo-participle can be employed as predicate in the first present or the third future.¹⁰⁵ In these sentences it always has a proper subject. See *infra* §16.6 and §19.4.

14.3.2 With a subject already playing a role in a preceding clause


Examples are quite frequent after ‘operator’ verbs,¹⁰⁶ such as *gmi* ‘find’ (see *infra* §32.5), and the semi-auxiliaries: *ḥc*, *ḥmsi*, *sdr*, *hpr*.¹⁰⁷

1. P. Leopold-Amherst, 2, 9-10 (= *KRI* VI, 484, 5-6).


iw.n (hr) gm pꜣy ntr sdr m ph tꜣy.f st qrs


‘We found this god lying (*lit.* ‘being stretched out’) at the back of his grave.’ In this example *pꜣy ntr* is both direct object of *gmi* and subject of *sdr*.

2. P. Mayer A, 3, 17 (= *KRI* VI, 809, 16).


sw gmy wꜣb hr nꜣ itꜣw dd.tw n.f tꜣw

‘He was found innocent concerning the thieves, (and) he was freed’ (*lit.* ‘He was found pure¹⁰⁸ ... one gave him the air’). Here *sw* is both subject of *gmy* (first present) and then of *wꜣb*.

3. P. Pushkin 127, 4, 12-13.¹⁰⁹


di.f ḥc.i šww.ti (m) nꜣy.i šsy

‘He caused that I found myself deprived of my grain (*lit.* grains)’ (*lit.* ‘that I stood being deprived ...’). The suffix *.i* is the subject of both the semi-auxiliary *ḥc* in the independent prospective *sdm.f* form, and of *šww.ti*.

¹⁰³ An exception is the verb *rh* ‘learn, seek to know’ which pseudo-participle retains, as in Middle Egyptian, an active value: *rh sw* ‘he knows’ (= he achieved seeking knowledge).

¹⁰⁴ Do not confuse the *Aktionsart*, which is part of the semantic (internal) value of the verb, for example: *search* (*Aktionsart* non-terminative) ≠ *find* (*Aktionsart* terminative), and the *aspect*, which is a value conferred by particular grammatical markings (external).

¹⁰⁵ And their derivatives obtained using the past converter *wn* or the circumstantial *iw*.

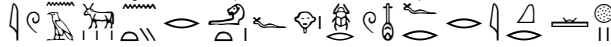
¹⁰⁶ Verbs that can introduce a complement clause. Verbes «opérateurs» in French. See Vernus, *Orientalia* 50 (1981), 432-433 and n. 10.

¹⁰⁷ On these verbs see Krutchen, *Études de syntaxe néo-égyptienne*, 1982, p. 43-44 and 69-71.

¹⁰⁸ Cf. the French expression ‘lavé de tout soupçon’ (= ‘cleared of all charges’).

¹⁰⁹ Another example with *hpr*: P. BM 10403, 3, 5-6 (= *KRI* VI, 831, 11-12).

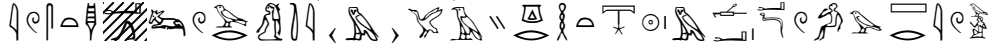
4. P. Orbiney, 2, 1-2 (= *LES*, 10, 15-16).



iw n3 ihw(t) nty r-h3t.f hr hpr nfr r-igr sp-sn

‘The cows that were under his responsibility became extremely fine.’ *n3 ihw(t)* is both the subject of the sequential *hr hpr* and of *nfr*.

5. Truth and Falsehood, 4, 5 (= *LES*, 32, 6).



iw.s (hr) h3r iwr.ti <m> p3y grh m w3 3dd šri

‘She became pregnant that night with a child.’ Here again the subject *.s* of the sequential is also the subject of the pseudo-participle *iwr.ti*.

6. O. Nash 2, v^o 8-9 (= *KRI* IV, 319, 8-9).



iw.i 333.k(wi) m p3y.i pr dd r pr-33 3.w.s.

‘I will have become a stranger¹¹⁰ in my house (it being) given¹¹¹ to Pharaoh l.p.h.’ In the latter example, it is a noun phrase, which forms part of the adverbial complement of the preceding clause, which functions as subject of the pseudo-participle.

14.4 Remarks

Some verbs are not attested in the pseudo-participle and appear not to have had this form. The following are some examples of these verbs:

<i>swr</i>	drink	<i>ptr</i>	see	<i>mri</i>	love, desire
<i>wnm</i>	eat	<i>sdm</i>	hear	<i>wh3</i>	seek
<i>dd</i>	say	<i>3m3</i>	learn	<i>qn</i>	achieve
<i>mdw</i>	speak	<i>stni</i>	distinguish	<i>rmi</i>	cry

¹¹⁰ Third Future with a pseudo-participle as predicate; cf. *infra* §19.4.

¹¹¹ *dd* is a well attested spelling of the pseudo-participle of *rdd* in the 3rd person masculine singular. On the other hand, examples of the passive participle with the same spelling are not known from the 19th dynasty. See Winand, *o.l.*, p. 149 and 370, who, unfortunately, does not discuss the passage. It should be understood that the house will be forfeited to the State.

INDEPENDENT VERBAL FORMS

Handwritten text in a cursive script, likely a title or header, featuring a prominent initial letter.

Main body of handwritten text in a cursive script, consisting of approximately 10 lines of dense, flowing characters.

Left column of handwritten text, consisting of approximately 6 lines of characters.

Right column of handwritten text, consisting of approximately 6 lines of characters.

15. The perfective *sḏm.f*

15.1 The active perfective *sḏm.f*

The use of this form is limited to transitive verbs, and expresses the **past**. It derives from the *iw sḏm.n.f* form of Middle Egyptian.

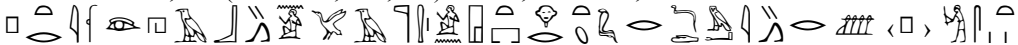
- By transitive verb is to be understood verbs that can have a direct object. It is possible, though, to encounter the perfective *sḏm.f* employed ‘intransitively,’ that is, without direct object.

15.1.1 Usage

The *sḏm.f* perfective is found both in the discourse, either in a narrative context or not, and in the narrative. In a narrative context, it allows one to describe events in the past in an **objective** and **punctual** manner.

- Given that the perfective *sḏm.f* is morphologically similar to the prospective *sḏm.f*, both possibilities should be considered whenever an independent *sḏm.f* form is encountered in a discourse context.

1. P. Gardiner 4, 5-6 (= *KRI* VII, 339, 8-9): letters, discourse, non-narrative context.


ptr h3b n.i p3 hm-ntr n hwt-hr r-dd my r šsp se

‘See, the prophet of Hathor has written to me saying: “Come to take them”’ (*lit.* ‘to receive them’).


2. P. Bologna 1086, 20-21 (= *KRI* IV, 81, 1-2): letter, discourse, non-narrative context.



m dy h3ty.k m-s3 p3 ts-prt iri.i smtr.f gm.i s 3 mnḥ 1 dmḏ 4 ir.n h3r 700 mdw.i m-dī n3 ḥryw s3w sšw n t3 šnwt

‘Do not worry about the seed-sowing form, I have examined it. I have found three men and a helper, total: 4, which makes 700 bags. I have reprimanded the chief archivists of the granary.’ Note the periphrasis of the verb *smtr* (4 *lit.*) using the auxiliary *iri* (see *supra* §13.2, Remark).

3. P. DM XVIII, 6 (= *KRI* VII, 384, 3-4): letter, discourse, non-narrative context.


iri.i ih r.t

‘What have I done against you?’

4. P. BM 10052, 7, 5-7 (= *KRI* VI, 784, 4-8): official report, narrative and discourse.



ir.Ø smtr.f m bdn dd.tw n.f i.dd p3 shr (n) p3 hq i.ptr.k m-di p3(y) nb twt dd.f ptr.i nhy n hd m-di.f iw.w am wmt n t(z)bw n hmt iw b(w)p(w)y.i dgs tzy st m rdwy.i

‘(He) was questioned with a staff. They said to him: “Relay (*lit.* ‘say’) the aspect of this silver that you saw in the possession of this master of yours.” He said: “I saw in his possession some silver (objects) that were the size (*lit.* ‘thickness’) of vases¹¹² in copper, although I did not soil this place with my feet.”¹¹³

During the 19th dynasty it is still possible to find rare vestiges of the *sdm.n.f* form:

5. P. Anastasi IX, 1-2 (= *KRI* III, 505, 3-4): letter, discourse, non-narrative context.



sdm.n.i n3 mdwt h3 (i).h3b.k n.i hr.w

‘I have learnt of the litigation cases about which you have written to me’ (*lit.* ‘I heard of the litigation matters about which you have sent to me’).

Remark: intransitive verbs can, sometimes, have a *sdm.f* with a past meaning. This represents a Second Tense deriving from the ‘emphatic’ *sdm.n.f* of the classical language.¹¹⁴ See *infra* §23.6.

15.1.2 Negation

The perfective *sdm.f* is negated with the *bwpwy.f sdm* form.

15.1.2.1 Origin

The *bwpwy.f sdm* form derives from Middle Egyptian *n p3.f sdm*,¹¹⁵ which is the ancestor of Coptic $\bar{M}\bar{P}\bar{C}\omega\bar{T}\bar{M}$:

n p3.f sdm ► *bwpwy.f sdm* ► $\bar{M}\bar{P}\bar{C}\omega\bar{T}\bar{M}$

15.1.2.2 Morphology

– current spellings: $\text{𓂏𓂏𓂏𓂏} = ; \text{𓂏𓂏} =$

– late spellings: $\text{𓂏𓂏} = ;$ rare spellings:¹¹⁶ $\text{𓂏𓂏𓂏} =$

¹¹² Perhaps ‘cups;’ see Janssen, *CP*, p. 433-434.

¹¹³ That is: ‘Although I have not set foot in this tomb.’

¹¹⁴ Groll, *JNES* 28 (1965), 189; Winand, *Morphologie*, p. 261-264.

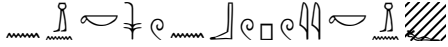
¹¹⁵ Where the auxiliary *p3* ‘to come into being for the first time,’ an indicative *sdm.f*, is followed by the infinitive of the auxiliary. Grandet-Mathieu, *Cours d’égyptien hiéroglyphique*, II, §37.4, p. 76.

¹¹⁶ P. Bulaq X, 7.

15.1.2.3 Usage

As negative correlate of the active perfective *sdm.f*.

6. P. Turin 2026, v° 1 (= *LRL*, 73, 7): letter, discourse, non-narrative context.



(i)n in.k se (i)n **bwpwy.k in. [f]**

‘Have you brought him (or) have you not brought him?’

7. Wenamun, 1, 22 (= *LES*, 63, 4-5): discourse, non-narrative context.



mk **bwpw.k gm p3y.i h4**

‘See, you have not found my silver.’

An example with a nominal subject:

8. P. Abbott, 2, 15 (= *KRI* VI, 470, 15-16): narrative.



bwpw n3 it3w rh ph.f

‘The thieves were not able to reach it.’





Remarks

1. The use of the *bwpwy.f sdm* form is not limited to the negation of the past of transitive verbs, it is also used as negative correlate of the ‘passive’ perfective *sdm.f* (see below) and of the forms of the first present expressing the past of intransitive verbs (see *infra* §16.6.2.1).

2. There is also another, infrequent, negation of the perfective *sdm.f*, the *bw sdm.f* form, which is the new spelling of *n sdm.f*, the negative correlate of the traditional *iw sdm.n.f*. The paucity of occurrences of this form to negate the perfective is probably due to the risk of confusion between this and another morphologically similar form, the *bw sdm.f* form, which represents a stage in the evolution of the negative aorist *n sdm.n.f* (see *infra* §17).

15.2 The perfective *sdm.f* called ‘passive’

15.2.1 Affirmative forms

It derives from Middle Egyptian ‘passive’ *iw sdm.f*. In Late Egyptian, it is employed only with a limited number of verbs. The following are the most frequent, shown here with their more common spellings: *iri*  ; *rdi*  ; *ini*  ; *gmi*  .

▪ The relative rarity of this form is due to the fact that it competed with the active form with an impersonal subject *sdm.tw* + noun (not to be confused with the second tense passive *sdm.tw.f*), and later with the active *sdm.w* with the third person plural as subject.¹¹⁷

It is in reality, just like its ancestor, an active form with an unexpressed subject (zero subject).

When, as in almost all cases, the patient of the process is nominal, it can be interpreted (or

¹¹⁷ Cf. the English usage to express the neuter: *they say*, French ‘on dit.’

perceived) as the subject of a passive form, or the direct object of an active form with zero subject.

9. P. Turin 1875, 6, 2 (= *KRI* v, 360, 3-4): narrative.

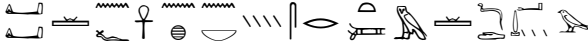


hrw ʕ pꜣy-bs (i).wn m wdpw **irw.Ø** n.f tꜣy sbꜣyt iw.tw (hr) wꜣh.f iw.f (hr) mtw n.f ds.f

‘The great enemy Paybes, who had been cup-bearer, this punishment was applied to him: one is to leave him (and) he is to (cause) death to himself.’ In this example, *tꜣy sbꜣyt* could be considered as the subject of a passive, or the direct object of an active form with Ø subject, but note that the text continues with an active construction, not a passive one, which would be **sw wꜣh*.

Parallel examples:

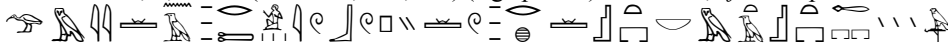
11. P. BM 10052, 4, 22 (= *KRI* vi, 777, 15-16): narrative.



dd.Ø n.f ʕnh n nb ʕ.w.s. r tm dd ʕdꜣ

‘An oath by the lord l.p.h. was imposed on him not to lie.’

11. P. Abbott, 7, 13-14 (= *KRI* vi, 481, 4-5) (fig. p. 245): narrative; cf. example 17.



gmy.Ø nꜣ rmtꜣ iw bwppw.w rhꜣ st nb m tꜣ st pr-ʕꜣ ʕ.w.s.

‘It was found that the people did not know of any tombs in the necropolis of Pharaoh l.p.h.’ (*lit.* ‘people were found, though they knew not ...’).

However, if the patient of the process is pronominal (which rarely happens), and the form is not periphrased, a dependent rather than a suffix pronoun is used. Consequently, this is an active construction.

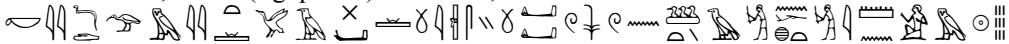
12. P. Turin 1880, 2, 17 (= *RAD*, 55, 13-14): discourse, non-narrative context.



iw.w (hr) **dd** n.n **dd.Ø** se m mꜣꜣt

‘They told us: “It was said in truth.”’

13. O. DM 554, v° 3-4 (fig. p. 103): discourse, narrative context.



ky dd gmy.Ø pꜣ sdy isy **ddw.Ø** se n rhty nht-imm m sw 9

‘Another thing: the used loincloth was found (and) it was given to the washerman Nakhtamun on day 9.’

If the form is periphrased (in the case of 4 *lit.* verbs) the pronominal patient is represented by a suffix attached to the infinitive, as is the norm with a direct object, and not to the auxiliary, as it would have been the case if the patient had been the subject of a passive syntagma.

14. P. Leopold-Amherst, 3, 16 (= *KRI* VI, 487, 6): narrative.

ir.Ø smtr.w

‘One questioned them.’ Periphrased active form with zero subject, improperly called ‘passive,’ where *.w* is the direct object.

Compare with example 4 above, and with the following:

15. P. Mayer A, v° 9, 10-11 (= *KRI* VI, 821, 1-2): narrative.

ir.f smtr.w

‘He questioned them.’ Periphrased, active form with expressed subject *.f*, and which also has *.w* as direct object.

▪ The real passive form employs the first present with a pseudo-participle as predicate: *sw smtr* ‘he was questioned’ (P. BM 10052, 10, 9 = *KRI* VI, 789, 12), see *infra* §16.6.1. It is also the construction more frequently used when the patient of the process is pronominal.

▪ In principle, one would not expect to find examples of the passive perfective *sdm.f* with a suffixal subject. A few cases have been identified, but they are all debatable.¹¹⁸

15.2.2 Negation

There is no special form, instead, the forms *bwpwy.tw sdm*¹¹⁹ with an impersonal subject, or *bwpwy.Ø sdm* with zero subject, are used, which are also employed as negation of the first present with a pseudo-participle as predicate, and of the active perfective *sdm.tw* + noun.

Example with nominal patient:

16. Doomed Prince, 4, 1 (= *LES*, 1, 1-2): narrative.

bwpwy.Ø msy n.f s3 t3y

‘No male son had been born to him’ (*lit.* ‘One had not given birth to a male son for him’).

Example with pronominal patient:

17. P. Abbott, 5, 5-6 (= *KRI* VI, 475, 4-5) (fig. p. 216): narrative; *cf.* example 11.

bwpwy.tw gm.tw.f iw rh.f st nb im

‘It was not found (out) that he had known of any tomb there’ (*lit.* ‘One did not find that he knew of any tomb there’). This example can also be interpreted as negation of the first present:¹²⁰ **sw gmy iw rh.f st nb im*.

¹¹⁸ See Winand, *o.l.*, p. 306; Satzinger, *NÄS*, §2.3.10.2.2, n. 2, p. 294; Wente *LRL*, p. 77, n. b. Add to the dismissed examples: P. Bologna 1086, 26-27, where it is very probably a second tense (successor of Middle Egyptian *sdm.n.tw.f*) and which is undoubtedly to be read *dd.(tw).f*.

¹¹⁹ And other rarer variants, see Winand, *o.l.*, p. 308.

¹²⁰ In this papyrus there are seven examples of *sw gmy* against one anomalous *gmi.f*; see Winand, *o.l.*, example 718, p. 306.

16. The First Present

16.1 Introduction

The first present is a bipartite construction based on the model of the nominal sentence with adverbial predicate, also called ‘location predication’ (= location sentence).

r (subject) *im* (predicate)

16.1.1 Subject

The subject, or first member, can be a noun (or noun equivalent), most often defined,¹²¹ or a special type of pronoun used only in this construction:

Proclitic pronouns of the first present

<i>Singular</i>	1 st	<i>tw.i</i>	
	2 nd masc.	<i>tw.k</i>	
	2 nd fem.	<i>tw.tw</i>	
	3 rd masc.	<i>sw</i>	
	3 rd fem.	<i>st</i>	
<i>Plural</i>	1 st	<i>tw.n</i>	
	2 nd	<i>tw.tn</i>	
	3 rd	<i>st</i>	
<i>Impersonal</i>		<i>tw.tw</i>	

▪ Beware of the confusion between the pronouns of the third person singular and plural, all pronounced *se*, and to the double value, *tw.i* and *tw.t*, of

When the converters *iw* (circumstantial) and *wn* (past) are employed, they are combined with the suffixes and not with the proclitic pronouns: *iw.f*

16.1.2 Predicate

The predicate, or second member, consists of an adverbial phrase that can be:

- an **adverb**,
- a **prepositional phrase** (preposition + noun or pronoun),
- **hr** + **infinitive**,
- **m** + **infinitive** (verbs of motion only),

¹²¹ The exceptions are rare: for *w* A a few examples are known. However, *Ø* A is not attested apart from Middle Egyptian aphorisms inserted in Late Egyptian texts (cf. ‘A rolling stone gathers no moss’). See in the latter instance Winand, *CdE* 64 (1989), 159-171.

– a **pseudo-participle** (some verbs do not have one).


16.2 The predicate is an adverb

The syntagma describes a situation contemporary to the statement (non-narrative passages), or to the events narrated (narrative passages). The use of the converter *wn* indicates a time prior to the point of reference.

sw im

1. Qadesh Bulletin, 27 (= *KRI* II, 108, 6-9): narrative.

‘Now, the Hittite enemy had come with all the chiefs of all foreign countries,

 *iw n rh hm.f r-dd st im*

without his majesty knowing that they were there’ (*lit.* ‘without that his majesty knew “they are there”’). In this narrative the point of reference is the time when the events unfolded.

Interrogative example:

2. Qadesh Bulletin, 12 (= *KRI* II, 105, 2): non-narrative passage.



dd.in hm.f n.sn st tmw n3y.in snw

‘Then his majesty said to them: “Where are they, your brothers?”’

Example with the converter *wn*:

3. P. Mayer A, 2, 12 (= *KRI* VI, 807, 6-7): non-narrative passage.



dd.f wn p3y.i it im n(=m) m3't

‘He said: “My father was there, in truth.”’

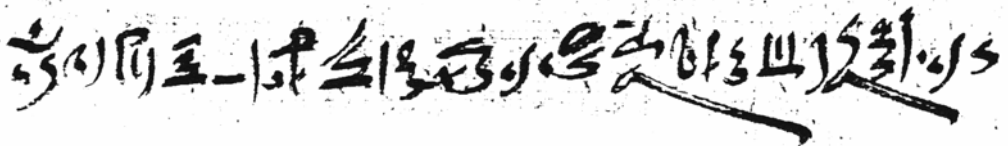
Sometimes the adverbial predicate shares its subject with one or more other predicates (*hr* + infinitive, pseudo-participle, prepositional phrase).

4. P. Northumberland I, v° 1 (= *KRI* I, 239, 15): non-narrative passage.



hr tw.i dy hr dd n dhwtu

‘And I am here, saying to Thoth.’



P. Northumberland I, v° 1

5. P. Berlin 10494, 6 (= *LRL*, 23, 11).



hr tw.n dy hms.ti m t3 hwt

‘And we are here, installed in the temple.’

The construction is **negated** using the negative morpheme *bn*:

bn sw im

6. P. DM VIII, 3 (= *KRI* VI, 671, 7).

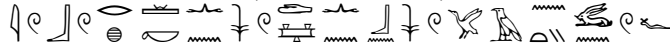


bn nzy.k iryw im r-dr.w

‘Your companions are not all there’ (*lit.* ‘they are not in their totality’).

▪ In the negative form the adverb is frequently implied, the predication is thus taken on by *bn*¹²² alone (see *infra* §22.3).

7. Wenamun, 2, 27-28 (= *LES*, 69, 12-13).



iw bw rh.k in sw dy in bn sw (dy) p3 nty wn.f (dy)

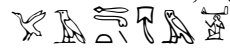
‘Without your knowing whether he was here, or if (he) was not (here), the one who had been (present)’ (*lit.* ‘without that you tried to know: is he here? Is he not (here) the one who had been (here)?’ – but who is no longer here).

16.3 The predicate is a prepositional phrase

The construction has the same values as before.

sw m p3 pr sw im.f

8. P. Cairo 58057, 7 (= *KRI* I, 238, 12).



p3 3 m-di.i

‘The donkey is in my possession.’

9. Graffito of regnal year 34 of Ramses II, 4 (= *KRI* III, 436, 11).



tw.i r-gs.tn

‘I am at your (pl.) side.’

10. Qadesh Bulletin, 14 (= *KRI* II, 105, 3-4): response to example 2 above.



st m p3 nty p3 wr hsi n ht3 im

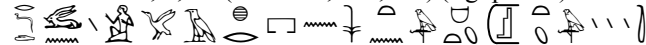
‘They are there where the wretched chief of Hatti is’ (*lit.* ‘in the (place) that the wretched chief of Hatti is in’).

¹²² See Vernus, *RdE* 36 (1985), 153-168.

Note the two embedded first present constructions, one with a prepositional phrase as predicate (*m p3 A*, with *A = nty p3 wr hsi n ht3 im*), the other, relativised by *nty*, with the adverb *im* (*p3 wr hsi n ht3 im*).

Examples with the converter *wn*:

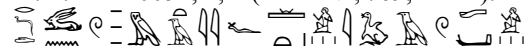
11. P. Abbott, 4, 16 (= *KRI* VI, 474, 8-9) (fig. p. 106).



r-dd wn.i m p3 hr n hmt nsw 3st ʿ.w.s.

‘Saying: “I was in the tomb of the royal wife Isis l.p.h.”’

12. P. BM 10052, 2, 1 (= *KRI* VI, 769, 11-12).



r-dd wn.w m t3y.f tt it3w

‘Saying: “They were in his group of thieves.”’

Interrogative example:

13. P. Northumberland I, 2 (= *KRI* I, 239, 4) (fig. p. 42).



tw.k mi ih sp-sn sp-sn

‘How are you then?’ (*lit.* ‘You are like what?’).

The construction is **negated** with the discontinuous negative morpheme(s) *bn...* (*itwn3*):

bn sw m p3 pr (itwn3)

bn sw im.f (itwn3)

14. P. Leiden I, 369, v^o 4 (= *LRL*, 2, 8).



hr bn tw.i m p3y.i shr itwn3

‘Because I am not in my (normal) condition.’

Example with *wn*:

15. P. Mayer A, 3, 28 (= *KRI* VI, 810, 13).



bn wn.f irm.i itwn3

‘He was not with me.’

16.4 The predicate is the *hr* + infinitive form

This form is always found in a non-narrative context where it can convey multiple values.¹²³

¹²³ With the exception of the verbs of motion, which use a specific construction to express the immediate present: first present with *m* + infinitive as predicate.

a. immediate present. It can be ‘synchronic’ – the event is simply presented as (almost) concomitant to the time of the statement: ‘(Come) to the table, we eat;’ or ‘unmarked’ (progressive), the event is presented in the process of realisation: ‘One is eating;’

b. habitual present (consuetudinal present or iterative) – the syntagma describes the repetition of the process without any specific temporal reference: ‘One eats three times a day;’

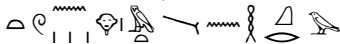
c. general present (or gnomic) – the event is described in general terms, in its universality, without any temporal reference: ‘One eats to live.’¹²⁴

sw hr sdm

Over time, and with increasing frequency, the preposition *hr* is omitted. In this case it should be inserted in brackets.

16.4.1 The immediate present

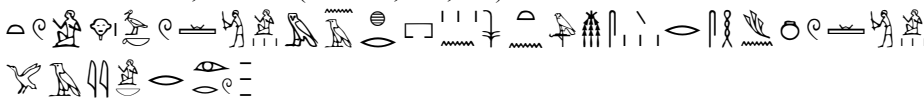
16. O. DM 607, 2.



tw.n hr mwt n hqr

‘We are dying of hunger.’ Unmarked present.

17. O. OIC 16991, 11- v° 3 (= *KRI* v, 560, 3-5).¹²⁵



tw.i hr b3k m n3 hrw n msw nsw r(=i).shn p3y.i nb r irt.w

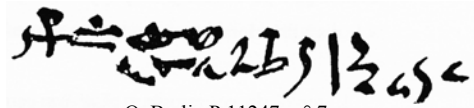
‘I am working on the tombs of the royal children that my master has commanded to make’ (*lit.* ‘that my master has given orders to make them’). Unmarked present.

18. O. Berlin P 11247, v° 7 (= *KRI* III, 533, 8).



tw.i hr wh3 irty.i nn se

‘I am looking for my eyes (but) they are no longer (there)!’ Unmarked present.



O. Berlin P 11247, v° 7

19. P. Cairo J 65739, 6 (= *KRI* II, 800, 11).¹²⁶



hr ptr tw.i hr dd tz swnt i.di.i r.s m-b3h n3 srw

‘And see, I state the price I paid for her before the officials.’¹²⁷ Synchronic present.

¹²⁴ The last two values are sometimes grouped under the term **aorist**.

¹²⁵ Parallel example: P. DM IX, 4-5 (= *KRI* VI, 672, 9).

¹²⁶ Parallel example: P. Anastasi V, 22, 7-8 (= *LEM*, 69, 1-2).

¹²⁷ There follows a list of objects representing the price of the slave.

20. P. Turin 2021, 2, 11-12 (= *KRI* VI, 740, 5-7).



tw.i (hr) dīt p3 iri. i nb irm ḥnh nw niwt ink-se-ndm t3 st-hmt nty m p3y.i pr n.s m p3 hrw

‘I bequeath, on this day, all that I have acquired together with the lady Ineksenedjem, the woman who lives with me, to her’ (*lit.* ‘I give everything that I have made with the citizen Ineksenedjem, the woman who is in my house, to her, on this day’). Synchronic present.

16.4.2 The habitual present

21. P. Cairo 58057, 8 (= *KRI* I, 238, 14-15).



hr tw.tw hr šd b3kw.f m-dī.i rnpt n rnpt

‘And one exacts from me its work (from) year to year.’

22. P. Leiden I 366, 2-3 (= *KRI* II, 910, 11-12).

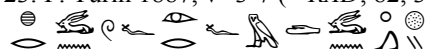


tw.i hr dd n p3-rḥr-šhty m p3y.f wbn m p3y.f htp

‘I say to Pre-Horakhty, at his rising, at his setting ...’

The use of the past converter *wn* allows one to describe past habitual events that are no longer occurring at the time of the statement.

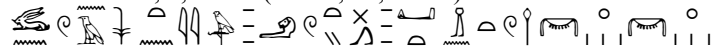
23. P. Turin 1887, v° 3-7 (= *RAD*, 82, 3).



hr wn.f (hr) ir(t).f m-dwn sp-sn

‘And he was doing it very often.’

24. Wenamun, 2, 28-29 (= *LES*, 69, 14-15).



wn n3 nsyw h3wtyw (hr) dīt in.tw hq nbw

‘Former kings had silver and gold brought.’

16.4.3 The general present (examples are rare)

25. P. Turin 2021, 3, 4 (= *KRI* VI, 740, 13-14): legal deed.



hr pr-ḥ3 ḥ.w.s. (hr) dd imi sfr n stn b(t) n.s

‘But Pharaoh I.p.h. said: “Give each woman her *sefer*”’ (*lit.* ‘the *sefer* of each woman to her’).

16.4.4 Negation

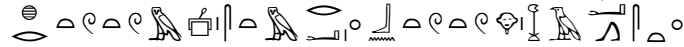
The construction is negated with *bn*. This, contrary to what is stated in some grammars,¹²⁸ can

¹²⁸ Černý-Groll, *LEG*, §20.1, p. 303-304.

negate both the immediate present (unmarked or synchronic), and the habitual, or general, present:

bn sw hr sdm

26. O. Ashmolean Museum 1945-37 + 1945-33, 13-14 (= *KRI* II, 381, 10).



hr tw.tw m-s3.s m-r^c bn tw.tw hr h3^c.s

‘And one is always in her pursuit (lit. ‘after her’), one does not leave her.’ Unmarked present.


27. O. OIC 16991, v^o 4-7 (= *KRI* v, 560, 6-7).



m dy dit p3y.i nb h3ty.f m-s3.w y3 tw.i hr b3k r-igr sp-sn bn tw.i hr nni m-kf3 sp-sn

‘Do not let my lord be concerned (lit. ‘put his heart after’) about them (= the tombs), for I am working very, very well, and I am not going to be idle at all.’ Note the use of the two forms of the unmarked present, affirmative first and then negative.

28. P. Bologna 1094, 2, 4-5 (= *LEM*, 2, 13-14): prayer to Amun, the vizier of the poor.



bn sw hr šsp {hr} fq3w n d3w bn sw hr dd {n} in mtrt bn sw hr nw r š^cr

‘He does not accept a wine-jar from the guilty, he does not say: “Bring evidence,” and he does not take into account the pressures.’ Negation of habitual activities.

29. P. Anastasi III, v^o 3, 2-3 (= *LEM*, 30, 16-31, 1).



st hr irt t3y.sn ipt (n) dbt m-mnt bn tw.i hr nni m b3kw m p3 pr n m3wt

‘They are making their quota of bricks daily, and I am not negligent with regard to the work in the new house.’ Description of habitual activities, with two syntagmas, one affirmative and the other negative.¹²⁹

30. P. Anastasi II, 7, 6-7 (= *LEM*, 17, 1-3).



p3 w^cb hr irt hnw i.iri.f nw iw wn 3.t r thb.f m p3> itrw bn sw hr stn r prt r šmw

‘The pure priest performs divine services and, since there are three of them, he spends the time plunging himself in the river. He does not distinguish between winter and summer.’ Note the two habitual presents, affirmative and negative.¹³⁰

¹²⁹ For another interpretation see Groll, *Negative*, p. 100-101 and example 209.

¹³⁰ The parallel passage in P. Sallier I, 7, 7 (= *LEM*, 85, 1-2) uses, in place of the present, a negative aorist; see *infra* §17.5, example 6.

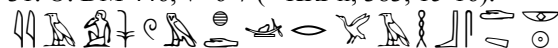
Very important remark: to emphasise the fact that the process **never** takes place, or that it cannot be completed, either because it is **unrealisable**, or because the agent is **incapable** of doing so, a marked form is used: the **negative aorist** (see *infra* §17).

16.5 The predicate is the *m* + infinitive form

This form is used exclusively with verbs of motion.¹³¹ It expresses only the unmarked (or progressive) present:

sw m ʕq: ‘he is entering’

31. O. DM 446, v° 6-7 (= *KRI* II, 383, 15-16).



y3 sw m hd r p3 hb-sd

‘Because he is travelling north for the Sed festival.’

The form is **negated** with the negative morpheme *bn* too:

bn sw m ʕq

32. P. BM 10375, 26 (= *LRL*, 46, 10-11).



(i)n bn tw.k m nʕy irm n3 hbsw

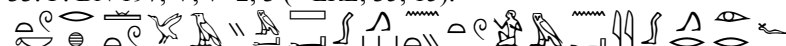
‘Are you not transporting (*lit.* ‘going with’) the clothes?’

16.5.1 Excursus: The first future

The verb *nʕi* ‘go, navigate, traverse,’ is employed in the above example with its full meaning. In Coptic (**ⲛⲁ**, **ⲛⲐⲮ**) it becomes the auxiliary of the first future that expresses the immediate future. Some examples of this usage can already be found in Late Egyptian.

subject + *m* + *nʕi* + *r/m* + infinitive

33. P. BN 197, V, v° 2, 3 (= *LRL*, 35, 15).



tw.k rh.tw p3y mʕc nty tw.i m nʕy r irt.f

‘You are aware of this journey that I am about to make.’

16.6 The predicate is a pseudo-participle

16.6.1 Transitive verbs (except *rh*)

The construction has the value of a passive perfective. If the agent of the process is expressed, it is introduced by the preposition *in* (cf. example 36 below).


sw w3h: ‘He has been placed’

- This passive value is only an effect of the meaning deriving from the fundamental value of the pseudo-


¹³¹ Except *ʕm*; see Satzinger, *NÄS*, p. 143.

participle: the construction means that the subject is in the position resulting from the completion of the action of placing.

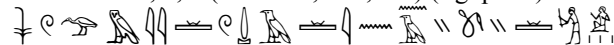
34. Wenamun, 1, 13 (= *LES*, 62, 4-5).


iw.i (hr) dd n.f tw.i tzy.tw n(=m) tzy.k mr(yt)
 ‘I said to him: “I have been robbed in your harbour.”’


35. P. Cairo 58057, 3 (= *KRI* I, 238, 7).


p3wn sw di.tw n.f
 ‘Because it (= the donkey) has been allocated to him’ (*lit.* ‘given’).

36. P. Abbott, 2, 7 (= *KRI* VI, 470, 3-4) (fig. p. 98).

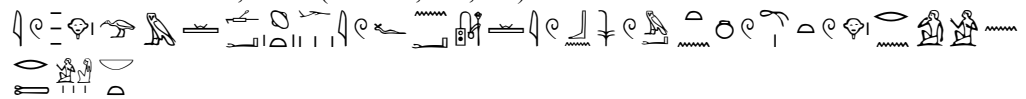

sw gmy wd3 in nzy rwdw
 ‘It (= the tomb) was found intact by these inspectors.’

37. O. UCL 19614, 5-6 (= *KRI* v, 2, 3-4).


iw.tw hr h3c.f r-dd bin iw.i hr dd.tw.f n.s m-mitt r-dd sw h3c
 ‘It was rejected saying: “It is bad.” I repeated it to her in these terms: “It has been rejected.”’

The isomorphic **negation** by means of the negative morpheme *bn* is rare. In the three examples listed,¹³² the form is preceded by the circumstantial *iw*.

38. P. Berlin P 10496, 12-13 (= *KRI* v, 477, 6-7).


iw.n hr gm w^c wt iw.f n^{cc} iw bn sw mtw.tw hr rn n rmt nb
 ‘They found a coffin that was plain, and that had not been inscribed with the name of anybody.’

▪ The construction *bwpwy.tw sdm.f* can also be used, see *supra* §15.2.2, example 17.

16.6.2 Intransitive verbs

16.6.2.1 Verbs of motion

The value of the syntagma depends on the nature of the passage:

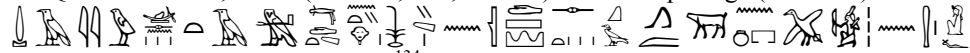
- **in narrative passages**, the action is presented in an active and punctual manner, unrelated to the time of the statement, to which it is anterior. It is the equivalent, for this category of verbs, of the perfective *sdm.f* of transitive verbs;
- **in non-narrative passages**, the construction describes the situation resulting from the

¹³² Other examples are found in P. Anastasi IV, 12, 6 (= *LEM*, 48, 5), and O. Gardiner 67, 4 (= *KRI* III, 542, 14).

completion of the action, still persisting at the time of the statement. Therefore, it has full resultative value.¹³³

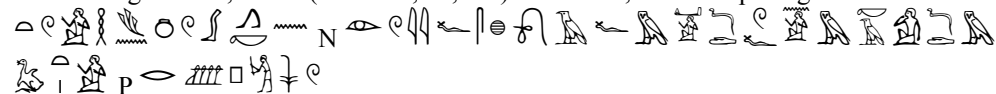
sw ʿq: ‘he entered’ (narrative context), ‘he has entered’ (non-narrative context)

39. Qadesh Bulletin, 78-79 (= *KRI* II, 118, 8 and 9): narrative passage (narrative).


*dʒy.sn tʒ mšdt nty hr rsy n qdš st ʿq*¹³⁴ *m-ḥnw pʒ mšc n ḥm.f*

‘They crossed the channel that is south of Qadesh, they penetrated in (amongst) the army of his majesty.’ Note the parallelism between *dʒy.sn*, perfective *sdm.f* of a transitive verb, and *st ʿq*, a first present having as predicate the pseudo-participle of a verb of motion.

40. P. Bologna 1086, 14-15 (= *KRI* IV, 80, 5-7): discourse, narrative passage.



tw.i ḥn.k(wi) n N iri.f shwn.f m-di.i dd.f n.i m kʒ-dd m tʒty P r(=i).šsp se

‘I ran to N, he contested it with me (= the fact of having taken a slave); in short,¹³⁵ he said to me: “It is the vizier P who took him.” Note also the use of the first present for the verb of motion, and the perfective (either periphrased or not) for transitive verbs.

41. Qadesh Bulletin, 40 (= *KRI* II, 111, 2): discourse, non-narrative passage.


ptr pʒ wr ḥsi n ḥtʒ iw

‘See, the wretched chief of Hatti has arrived’ (*lit.* ‘has come’ — and is still there). Note (as below) the presence of the particle *ptr*, mark of the *hic* and *nunc*.

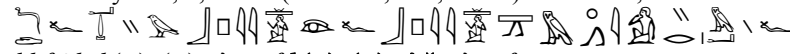
42. P. Turin 2021, 2, 8-9 (= *KRI* VI, 740, 1-2): discourse, non-narrative passage.


hr ptr tw.i iw.k(wi) m-bʒḥ tʒty [nʒ] srw n tʒ qnbt m pʒ hrw

‘And see, I am come here today before the vizier and the magistrates of the court’ (‘and I am here at this moment’).

The isomorphic **negation** (with *bn*) is not used;¹³⁶ the form *bwpwy.f ʿq* is used instead.

43. P. Mayer A, 5, 18-19 (= *KRI* VI, 814, 12-13): discourse, non-narrative passage.


dd.f ʿdʒ b(w)p(w)y.i ptr.f b(w)p(w)y.i šm irm.f

‘He said: “It is false, I did not see him, I did not go with him.”’

This example illustrates the fact, already pointed out, that the form *bwpwy.f sdm* serves as negation of the perfective *sdm.f* of transitive verbs **and** of the first present having as predicate

¹³³ Satzinger, *o.c.*, p. 133-144.

¹³⁴ Variant: *ʿḥc.n.sn ʿq*.

¹³⁵ See Gardiner, *JEA* 24 (1938), 243-244.

¹³⁶ A resultative example: P. Turin A, v^o 4, 7-8 (= *CLEM* 509, 11).

the pseudo-participle of verbs of motion. The affirmative form would have been: **dd.f m3ˆtw ptr.i se tw.i sm.k(wi) irm.f* ‘He said: “It is true, I saw him, I went with him.”’

16.6.2.2 Other intransitive verbs (locative verbs, adjective verbs, to die, to live, etc.)

They substantially convey the same values as the verbs of motion.¹³⁷

Narrative passages (active, punctual, equivalent to the perfective *sdm.f* of transitive verbs):

sw sdr ‘he laid (down)’ *sw mwt* ‘he died’
wn.f sdr ‘he (had) laid (down)’

Non-narrative passages (resultative stative (or stative) linked to a present situation):

sw sdr ‘he is laid (down)’ *sw mwt* ‘he is dead’
wn.f sdr ‘he was laid (down)’ *wn.f mwt* ‘he was dead’

This dual value is illustrated by the following example, where the verb *mwt* is used in a narrative context first (presence of sequentials) and a non-narrative one after:

44. O. DM 126, 5-6 (= *KRI* III, 532, 6-7).



p3y rmt mwt m pr n hr-m-hb iw.f hr h3b n.i r-dd hr-ms mwt iw.i hr sm hnˆ mhy

‘This man **died** in the house of Horemheb, he (= Horemheb) wrote to me saying: “Harmose **is dead.**” I went with Mehy...’

45. O. Cairo 25556, 4-5 (= *KRI* IV, 302, 15-303, 1): discourse, narrative passage.



ir ink tw.i sdr.kwi m t3y.i isb(t) iw p(3)-n-imm (hr) pr hnˆ n3y.f rmt iw.sn (hr) dd hnw m-di ˆ3 n pr-ˆ3 ˆ.w.s. r h3y

‘As for me, I was laying (down) in my hut. Penamun went out with his people, they made accusations of lese-majesty (*lit.* ‘concerning the greatness of Pharaoh l.p.h.’) against Hay.’

¹³⁷ Satzinger, *o.c.*, p. 149-162.

46. P. Mayer A, 6, 21-22 (= *KRI* vi, 816, 12-14): discourse, narrative passage.



dd.f wn.i hms.k(wi) r s3w nhy n it irm 3cc qr hr ir tw.i m {n} iy r-hry iw.i (hr) gm wcb t3t3-šri
 ‘He said: “I was sitting guarding (*lit.* ‘sat to guard’) some grain (pl.) together with the foreigner Qar; now, as I came down (*lit.* ‘went downwards’), I met the pure priest Tatasheri.”’

47. P. Gardiner 4, v° 1 (= *KRI* vii, 339, 11): discourse, non-narrative passage.



tw.i wʿ.kwi hr p3y.i sn mr

‘I am alone (*lit.* ‘lonely’) because my brother is sick.’

48. P. Leiden I 366, 7 (= *KRI* ii, 911, 1-2): discourse, non-narrative passage.



tw.i ʿnh.k(wi) m p3 hrw bw rh.i ʿ.i n dw3w

‘I am alive today (but) I do not know my condition of tomorrow.’

49. P. Northumberland I, v° 1 (= *KRI* i, 239, 15): discourse, non-narrative passage.



tw.i hqr.k(wi) m ptr.k

‘I am famished to see you’ (= I have much desire to see you).

The isomorphic **negation** (with *bn*) is only attested in non-narrative contexts, and it is not uncommon with adjective verbs like *nfr* or *ndm*.

50. O. IFAO 1296, 7 (Černý-Groll, *LEG*, example 847): discourse, non-narrative passage.



bn tw.k hqr.tw

‘You are not famished’ *cf.* example 49 above.

51. O. DM 554, 6 (fig. p. 87): discourse, non-narrative passage.



nn sw nfr p3 r(=i).ir.n.k

‘It is not good what you have done.’

Note the traditional spelling of the negation and of the relative form, but especially the adverbial value of the pseudo-participle that contrasts the adjectival value of the form *bn nfr iwnt3*: ‘It (= the donkey) is not good’ (O. Petrie 14 = *KRI* v, 524, 8), negation of *nfr sw* ‘it is good.’

16.7 Special case: the verb *rh*¹³⁸

This verb, which Aktionsart is non-terminative, and which first meaning is ‘to seek to know,’

¹³⁸ *Satzinger, NÄS*, §2.3.12, p. 184-191; Frandsen, *LEVS*, §24 (2), p. 37-38; Černý-Groll, *LEG*, §20.5.4-10, p. 311-313. Its analysis here is limited to the present and the past tenses.

must be studied apart. While it is transitive, it possesses, as in Middle Egyptian, an active pseudo-participle, which negation takes, most of the time, a specific form: *bw rh.f*. Its direct object can be a noun (frequently) or an infinitive (rarer).¹³⁹

16.7.1 *rh* + noun (or pronoun)

In almost all cases, the process is presented as completed; the construction thus has a resultative value, the meaning being ‘to know, to have knowledge (of).’

<i>Present</i>	affirmative	<i>sw rh</i>	‘he knows’ ¹⁴⁰
	negative	<i>bw rh.f</i>	‘he does not know’ ¹⁴¹ (very frequent; negation of the process: ‘He has not learned’)
		<i>bn sw rh</i>	‘he does not have knowledge of’ (rare; ¹⁴² negation of the result)
<i>Past</i>	affirmative	<i>rh.f</i>	‘he knew’ ¹⁴³
	negative	<i>bwpyw.f rh</i>	‘he did not know’ ¹⁴⁴

▪ The unmarked imperfective aspect ‘learn, get to know’ does not appear to be used. Indeed *sw hr rh* ‘he learns,’ and *bn sw hr rh* ‘he does not learn’ are not attested. Note, however, an example of the negative aorist (cf. §17): *bw iri.f rh* ‘he cannot learn.’ P. Chester Beatty IV, v° 4, 4.

16.7.2 *rh* + infinitive

This is a rather infrequent construction. The meaning is: ‘try to, seek to, have the will to’ (imperfective), ‘be able to, can’ (perfective).

<i>Present</i>	affirmative ¹⁴⁵	<i>sw hr rh stp</i>	he tries to choose ¹⁴⁶
	negative	<i>bw rh.f stp</i>	he is not able to choose ¹⁴⁷
		<i>bn sw hr rh stp</i>	he does not try to choose ¹⁴⁸
<i>Past</i>	negative ¹⁴⁹	<i>bwpyw.f rh stp</i>	he has not been able to choose ¹⁵⁰

¹³⁹ The verb can also be constructed with *r-dd* + independent form (see *infra* §32.5.4). For an example with the perfective see P. Bologna 1086, 6-7, cited in §23.4.1, example 2.

¹⁴⁰ P. BN 197 V, v° 2-3 (= *LRL*, 35, 15 = example 33 above).

¹⁴¹ Qadesh Bulletin, 27 (= example 1 above); P. Leiden I 366, 7 (example 48 above).

¹⁴² Two examples: P. Leiden I 371, v° 26 and 37, and P. Anastasi V, 26, 4 (= *LEM*, 71, 7-8) with *is bn*.

¹⁴³ With the circumstantial *iw*: P. Abbott, 5, 5-6 (example 17, §15.2.2 *supra*).

¹⁴⁴ With the circumstantial *iw*: P. Abbott, 7, 13-14 (example 11, §15.2.1 *supra*).

¹⁴⁵ The pseudo-participle (**sw rh stp*) is not attested in this construction.

¹⁴⁶ In a clause relativised by *nty*: P. Gurob, 2, 5-6 (= *RAD*, 14, 10-11).

¹⁴⁷ With the circumstantial *iw*: Qadesh Bulletin, 65-67 (example 6, §13.4.1.2 *supra*).

¹⁴⁸ Horus and Seth, 3, 1 (= *LES*, 39, 14-15).

¹⁴⁹ The affirmative form is not attested.

¹⁵⁰ P. Abbott, 2, 15 (= *KRI* VI, 470, 15-16).

16.8 Summary: the main forms of the First Present

affirmative		negative
<i>sw dy</i>	he is here	<i>bn sw (dy)</i>
<i>sw m p3 pr</i>	he is in the house	<i>bn sw m p3 pr (iwn3)</i>
<i>sw hr w3h</i>	he places	<i>bn sw hr w3h</i> (<i>bw iri.f w3h</i>) ¹⁵¹
<i>sw m ʿq</i>	he enters	<i>bn sw m ʿq</i>
<i>sw w3h</i>	he is placed	<i>bn sw w3h</i> <i>bwpwy.tw w3h.f sw</i> ¹⁵²
<i>sw ʿq</i>	he entered <i>or</i> he has entered	<i>bwpwy.f ʿq</i>
<i>sw mwt</i>	he died <i>or</i> he has died	?
<i>sw hms</i>	he sat <i>or</i> he is seated	?
<i>sw hqr</i>	he is famished	<i>bn sw hqr</i>
<i>sw nfr</i>	he is good <i>or</i> he is well	<i>bn sw nfr</i>
<i>sw rh</i>	he knows	<i>bw rh.f</i> (frequent) <i>bn sw rh</i> (rare)

¹⁵¹ ‘He never places, he is unable to place,’ negative aorist, see *infra* §17.5.

¹⁵² See Frandsen, *o.c.*, §42.4, p. 76.

17. The negative aorist

17.1 Introduction

This is the descendant of the Middle Egyptian *n sdm.n.f* form, which later developed into *bw sdm.n.f*, which is very rare. Following the disappearance of *n*, it developed into *bw sdm.f*, a transitional and ambiguous form that could be confused with the, outwardly, similar negation of the perfective *sdm.f* deriving from *n sdm.f* (see above §15.1.2.3, n. 2). Finally, with the periphrasis of the verb by the auxiliary *iri*, it developed into the construction most commonly employed: *bw iri.f sdm*.

n sdm.n.f ► *bw sdm.n.f* ► *bw sdm.f* ► *bw iri.f sdm* ► ΜΕ4CΩΤᾀ

17.2 Values

It is, as its classic ancestor, a form that negates the **realisation** of the process without any temporal reference.

As the negation applies only to the **realisation** of the process, without excluding attempts at realisation, obviously unsuccessful, the construction often conveys a nuance of inability or impossibility.

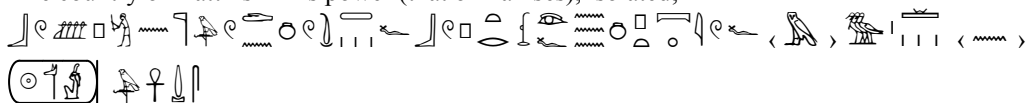
The negative aorist is, thus, a **marked form**, without temporal value, used to specify that the process:

- was not, is not, or will **never** (or never again) be **accomplished**,¹⁵³
- and, possibly, that it **cannot** be accomplished, because it is impossible, or the agent is incapable of doing so.

17.3 *bw sdm.n.f* (very rare)

1. P. Anastasi IV, 6, 9 (= *LEM*, 41, 7-8):¹⁵⁴ school text.

‘The country of Hatti is in his power (that of Ramses), isolated;



bw šsp.n ntr wdnw.f bw ptr.f mw nw pt iw.f ṁw b3w <n> wsr-m3t-rʿ ʿ.w.s.

‘the (Hittite) god no longer receives (or ‘can no longer receive’) its offerings (and consequently) he never sees (or ‘can no longer see’) the rain, being that it is in the power of Usermaatra l.p.h.’

17.4 *bw sdm.f* (quite frequent in school texts)

2. P. Anastasi III, 7, 8 (= *LEM*, 29, 1-2): school text.

dr ptr.w p3 hq3 ʿ.w.s. ḥʿ hr ḥ3 bw ḥʿ dww r-ḥ3t.f

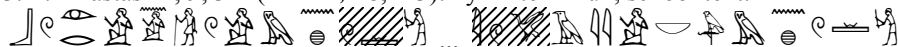
‘Since they saw the sovereign l.p.h. fighting, the mountains cannot stand before him.’¹⁵⁵

¹⁵³ Note that the traditional form *n sp sdm.f* (Gardiner, *EG*, §106 and 456) does not have a Late Egyptian successor.

¹⁵⁴ The parallel P. Anastasi II, 2, 4 (= *LEM*, 13, 3) shows the form without *n*, *bw sdm.f*.

¹⁵⁵ For this expression, see Yoyotte, *Kémi* 10, p. 67.

3. P. Anastasi II, 9, 3-4 (= *LEM*, 18, 1-3): hymn to Amun, school text.



bw iri.i n.i sr m nhw ... [iw p]zy.i nb m nhw

‘I never take an official as protector ... because my lord (*i.e.* Amun) is a protector.’

17.5 *bw iri.f sdm*

4. P. Phillipps, v° 6-7 (= *LRL*, 30, 8-9).



hr bw iri.i nni m utz n.f mw

‘And I never neglect to take water to him.’

5. P. BM 10053, v° 3, 12 (= *KRI* VI, 760, 2-3).



hr ir hrw iw pz-mniw pzy.n hry (hr) utt irm.n r-dd bw iri.tn dit n.i nk[t]

‘Now, one day, Pameniu, our superior, quarrelled with us saying: “You never give me anything!”’

6. P. Sallier I, 7, 6-7 (= *LEM*, 84, 17-85, 2).



pz w°b hr irt hnw iw i.iri.f nw iw wn 3 thb.f m pz itrw bw iri.f stn r prt šmw

‘The pure priest performs divine services and, since there are three of them, he spends the time plunging himself in the river. He cannot distinguish between winter and summer.’¹⁵⁶

7. P. DM v, 4 (= *KRI* VI, 266, 3).

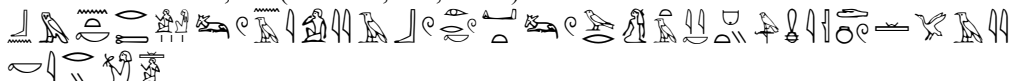
Write to me, please, of the state of your heart so that I (may) enter it, because, (despite) my being with you since I was a child until today,



hr bw iri.i m pzy.k qi

‘I cannot understand your nature.’¹⁵⁷

8. O. Berlin P 10627, 6-8 (= *KRI* VI, 155, 12-13).



bn ntk rmt iw n z bw iri.k dit iwr tzy.k hmt mi-qd pzy.k iry

‘You are no man, because you are not able to impregnate your wife like everybody else’ (*lit.* ‘like your similar’).

¹⁵⁶ Cf. the parallel example with a negative first present (§16.4.4, example 30).

¹⁵⁷ For this passage, see Neveu, *SAK* Beihefte 3 (1988), 103.

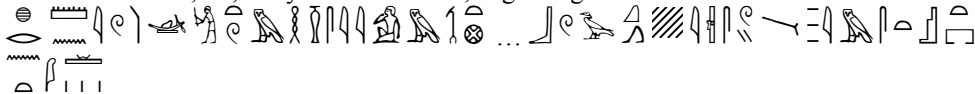
17.6 Excursus: the *hr-sdm.f* form

The negative aorist is also used to negate a form rare in Late Egyptian, the *hr-sdm.f*. This construction, which derives from the *sdm-hr* and *hr.f sdm.f* forms of classical Egyptian, is the ancestor of the Demotic aorist *hr ir.f sdm* and Coptic ⲬⲁⲘⲚⲓⲙⲓ. It can be found in an initial position, after a topicalisation or in the apodosis of a correlative system. It denotes something that must necessarily happen, or that has to be done in the given circumstances. The *hr-sdm.f* form occurs in aphorisms, proverbs, instructions, or in descriptions of habitual facts – all of the applications are exactly those of the aorist in demotic.¹⁵⁸

sdm-hr.f ► *hr.f sdm.f* ► *hr-sdm.f* ► *hr ir.f sdm* ► ⲬⲁⲘⲚⲓⲙⲓ

In initial position:

9. P. Leiden I 350, VI, 9: hymn to Amun-ra, beginning of stanza.



hr-mni.tw m ḥsy m wꜣst ... bw ʿq isfty im.s st nt mꜣt

‘One lands like a blessed one in Thebes ... the fisherman never enters (or ‘cannot enter therein’) (in) the Place of Truth.’ In this example, the initial form *hr-sdm.f* is followed by a negative aorist.

After topicalisation:

10. O. Berlin P 10627, 9-11 (= *KRI* VI, 155, 14-156, 1).



tw.k ʿšꜣ m dr̄iw r-iqr bw iri.k d̄it nkt n wꜣ ir pꜣ nty iw¹⁵⁹ mn m-d̄i.f ʿdd hr-in.f n.f ky nmḥ shpr.f (se)

‘You are too rich, (but) you never give anything¹⁶⁰ to anybody. As for he who has no child, he should¹⁶¹ adopt some¹⁶² orphan to raise him up.’

In the apodosis of a correlative system:

11. Pentawer poem, 202 (= *KRI* II, 65, 1-4): epic narrative; synthesis of engraved texts.



ir ph.ī r ḥḥ im.sn bw iri rdwy.w smn hr-wꜣr.sn

‘If I attack millions among them, their legs cannot stand firm, they must flee.’ It should be noted that the apodosis consists of two directly parallel aorists, first as a negative form and then as an affirmative one.

¹⁵⁸ See Johnson, *DVS*, p. 137.


¹⁵⁹ The presence of *iw* after *nty* is not necessary, it heralds a demotic usage.

¹⁶⁰ Or ‘you are not able to give anything.’

¹⁶¹ The aorist retains here the nuance of obligation that it had in classical Egyptian, see Vernus, *Future*, p. 78-82 and 98.

¹⁶² *ky* does not necessarily refer to something or somebody already mentioned, see *supra* §6.2.

12. P. Turin A, v° 1, 6-7 (= *CLEM*, 507, 4-5): school text, passage from a letter addressed to an apprentice scribe that one cannot prevent from sneaking out.

A row of 25 Egyptian hieroglyphs representing the text below. The symbols include various signs for 'ir', 'dd', 'tw', 't3', 'ph3t', 'm', 'rdwy', 'k', 'hr-h3c', 'k', 'ht', 'r', 's', 'm', and 'grh'.

ir dd.tw t3 ph3t m rdwy.k hr-h3c.k ht r.s m grh

‘If a fetter is put to your feet (‘if a fetter is placed on your feet’), you set it on fire in the night.’

18. The expression ‘not yet’

This expression is articulated, both with active and negative meaning, by the successors of Middle Egyptian perfective *n sdm.t.f* form ‘he has not yet heard.’¹⁶³

18.1 Active Voice

From Middle Egyptian to Coptic its evolution is as follows:

n sdm.t.f ► *bw sdm.t.f* ► *bw iri.t.f sdm* ► ΜΠΑΤ̄QCΩΤ̄M̄

Whereas the *bw sdm.t.f* form is rare and is employed only with a small number of verbs (*rdi*, *iri*, *šm*, *rh*) in texts of the 19th dynasty, *bw iri.t.f sdm*, is much more frequent, and is encountered with a greater variety of verbs. In both cases, the *t* is often written out using the full grapheme:

¹⁶⁴

1. O. Turin 57093, v^o 4.

hr bw di.t.f qw

‘And he has not yet given provisions.’

2. P. Anastasi V, 21, 2-3 (= *LEM*, 67, 15-16).

bn tw.k hr hzb n.i nfr m-r-pw bin hr bw iri.t rmt m n3 nty tw.k (hr) hzb.w {hr} snn hr.i dd.f n.i hr .k

‘You do not send to me any news, good or bad, because none of the people among those you send has yet come to me to give me your news’ (*lit.* ‘that he can tell me of your condition’).

3. P. Nevill, v^o 3-4 (= *JEA* 35 (1949), 70 and pl. VI): letter to the oracle.

hr bw iri.t.k hzb n.i nfr bin

‘But, you have not yet answered me, favourably or unfavourably’ (*lit.* ‘You have not yet sent to me, good or bad’).

18.2 Passive Voice

The ‘not yet’ expression in the passive voice is articulated through the form *bw sdm.y.t N* ‘N has not yet been heard,’ never periphrased, where the patient of the process is always nominal. This is a construction in the decline, which use is limited to three verbs: *iri*, *rdi*, *ini*.¹⁶⁵

¹⁶³ Gardiner, *EG*, §402-405.

¹⁶⁴ See Winand, *o.l.*, §458-462, p. 289-292.

¹⁶⁵ See Winand, *o.l.*, §519-521, p. 329-331.

4. P. Anastasi IV, 8, 1-2 (= *LEM*, 42, 14-16): a *skty* boat has broken in the water.



wnn bw dy.t n.f nhy n hryt qsy n šnty hr bw dy.t n.f nhy n hryt qsy n im gr mh.sn m p3 skty

‘It turns out that it had not yet been laid with high gunwales in acacia, any more than it had been laid with high gunwales in *im*-wood so that they might keep the boat in good repair’ (*lit.* ‘The fact being that it had not yet been laid with high gunwales in acacia and it had not yet been laid with high gunwales in *im*-wood either’¹⁶⁶).

5. P. Anastasi VI, 42 (= *LEM*, 75, 13-14).



hr bw dy.[t n.ī] prt diw r-š3-(r) p3 hrw

‘And neither seed nor rations have yet been supplied (*lit.* ‘given’) to me until today.’

¹⁶⁶ It is an explanatory gloss in which *wnn* nominalises the verbal sentence containing the following *bw sqmy.t N* form. The resulting one is a nominal sentence of the type *B Ø*, in Middle Egyptian *B pw*, see *infra* §34.3 and §39.2.2.1, Remark.

19. The Third Future

19.1 Introduction

The third future is the Late Egyptian successor of the Middle Egyptian construction subject + *r* + infinitive.¹⁶⁷ Like its predecessor, it expresses the ‘**objective future**,’ which contrasts with the ‘modal future’ expressed by the prospective *sdm.f*. It often conveys a ‘**deontic**’ nuance, the subject being pressed into action by a transcendent obligation.¹⁶⁸ From a practical point of view there are morphological differences, since the subject of the third future is either pronominal or nominal.¹⁶⁹

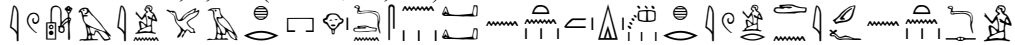
19.2 Pronominal subject

The suffixal subject is necessarily attached to the morpheme *iw*, which is an integral part of the construction. The construction is negated by means of the negative morpheme *bn*.

iw.f r sdm ‘he will hear’ *bn iw.f r sdm* ‘he will not hear’

- The *iw* (see *supra* §12.2) of the third future is the only *iw* that can appear in an initial position, or after the direct indicators of initiality, and the particles *hr*, *mk*, or *ptr*.
- The preposition *r*, like *hr* in the case of the first present, can be omitted, and, thus, it is to be restored in brackets.

1. P. Turin 1880, 3, 4-5 (= *RAD*, 56, 6-7).



iw sš hri n pš hr hr dd n.sn dd n.in gs diw hr iw.i r dni.f n.in ds.i

‘The scribe of the tomb, Hori, said to them: “It has been allocated to you (pl.) half ration(s), and I shall share it out to you myself.”’

2. P. Gurob, 2, 1-2 (= *RAD*, 14, 5-6).

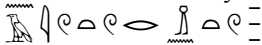


iw.i r dit iri.tw swhz n.i hr.w bn iw.i r dit tzy.tw n.i

‘I will cause that one congratulate me because of them (= the students entrusted by Pharaoh), I will not let that one attack me.’¹⁷⁰ It can also be translated with a ‘deontic’ nuance: ‘it is necessary that I ensure ...’

3. P. Leiden I 368, 11 (= *KRI* II, 895, 11): concerning prisoners.

‘I wrote to inform my lord in these terms: “that one write to me to give me instructions:



in iw.tw r in.tw.w

will they be brought?’”

¹⁶⁷ Gardiner, *EG*, §332, p. 253-254.

¹⁶⁸ See Vernus, *Future*, 1990, p. 9-15.

¹⁶⁹ See the excellent chapter by Winand on the third future, *o.l.*, p. 481-517.

¹⁷⁰ Or ‘that fault is found with me,’ for this expression see Caminos, *JEA* 49 (1963), 32.

4. P. Abbott, 5, 18 (= *KRI* VI, 476, 9) (fig. p. 216).

‘The scribe of the interior of the proscribed Tomb Hori-the-young, son of Amennakht, and the scribe of the Tomb Paybes, have reported to me against you (pl.) concerning five very serious crimes, punishable by death,



hr iw.i (r) hsb hr.w m-bsh pr-ʕ3 ʕ.w.s p3y.i nb ʕ.w.s.

and I must write about them to Pharaoh l.p.h., my lord l.p.h.’ In this example the ‘deontic’ value is clearly marked.

The use of the past converter *wn* before the third future gives it, in addition to a past temporal value, a nuance of unreality rendered in English by the conditional. This usage is frequent in the apodosis of correlative systems introduced by *hn* (see *infra* §36.2).

5. P. BM 10052, 4, 11-12 (= *KRI* VI, 776, 13-14).

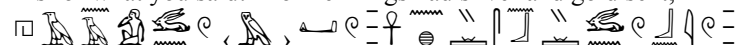


dd.f b(w)p(w)y.i ptr rmj nb hn ptr.i wn iw.i (r) dd.tw.f

‘He said: “I did not see anyone, if I had seen (someone), I would have said it.”’

6. Wenamun, 2, 29-30 (= *LES*, 69, 15-16).

‘As for what you said: “Former kings had silver and gold sent,”



hn wn <m>-di.w ʕnh snb wn bn iw.w (r) dit in.tw n3 htw

if they had had life and health (see *infra* §22.1), they would not have caused material goods to be sent.’

19.3 Nominal subject

In this case, *iw* is, in principle, substituted with *iri* , thus the construction is:

iri N r sdm

bn iri N r sdm

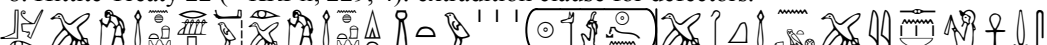
7. O. Nash 1, v° 12 (= *KRI* IV, 317, 9-10).



iri p3y.i nb r dit iry.tw sb3yt n t3y st-hmt r(=i).it3y p3 hl

‘My lord will cause a punishment to be inflicted on this woman who stole the pick.’ Or, with a ‘deontic’ nuance: ‘It is necessary that my lord causes a punishment to be inflicted...,’ on the evidence of the passage ending: ‘so that no other woman of her kind acts so again.’

8. Hittite Treaty 22 (= *KRI* II, 229, 4): extradition clause for defectors.



bn iri p3 wr ʕ3 n ht3 r šsp.w

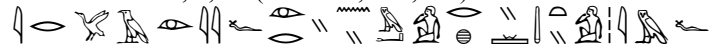
iri p3 wr ʕ3 n ht3 (r) dit in.tw.w n wsr-m3ʕt-rʕ stp.n-rʕ p3 hq3 ʕ3 n kmt p3y.sn nb ʕ.w.s.

‘The great chief of Hatti will not welcome them, the great chief of Hatti will have them brought back to Usermaatira Setepenra, the great ruler of Egypt, their lord l.p.h.’ The ‘deontic’ value of the construction is still clearly perceptible, since the sovereign must act in accordance with

external norms specified in the treaty.

The interrogative pronoun *nim* is also constructed with *iri*:

9. P. Turin 2021, 3, 10 (= *KRI* VI, 741, 7-8).



ir p3 iri.f iri nim (r) rh mdw im.f

‘As for what he has done, who will be able to contest it?’

It is, however, possible to find syntagmas, affirmative or negative, where the subject, though nominal, is introduced by *iw*.¹⁷¹

Affirmative example:

10. P. ESP, A, 7 (= *KRI* VI, 517, 10).



r-dd iw p3y.i hry (r) iy mtw.tn [dit] f3y.tw i.n.i

‘Saying: “My superior will come and you will have it loaded,” so I said.’

In this example, one will have noted the presence of *iw* after *r-dd*. A dependent form cannot appear after *r-dd*, the sequential and the circumstantial first present are excluded, thus the only other possibility is the third future, hence the restoration of the preposition *r* in brackets. This interpretation is reinforced by the presence of a conjunctive, a very frequent construction after a third future.

Negative example:

11. O. Petrie 61, 7- v° 3 (= *HO*, 23, 4).



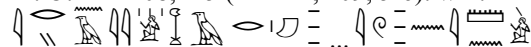
iw.t (r) hms m t3 ʿryt m p3y.i wd3 p3wn ink i.iri se bn iw rm3 nb n p3 t3 [r] h3ʿ.t im r-bl

‘You will stay in the vestibule of my storehouse because it is I who built it (*lit.* made), and no one at all will throw you out from there.’

19.4 Remarks

It is possible to encounter, especially in wills and oaths, the third future with a **prepositional phrase** or a **pseudo-participle** as predicate.

12. O. DM 108, 4-5 (= *KRI* I, 409, 5-6): will.



ir n3y.i hl ...iw.w n imn-ms

‘As for my picks ... they will be for Amenmose.’

¹⁷¹ See Winand, *o.l.*, §776, p. 498-500.

13. O. Gardiner 55, v° 4-6 (= *HO*, 66, 2): testamentary dispositions.

hr ir ʒht nb sp-sn nty m pʒy. ʔ pr iw.w n tʒy. ʔ hmt hnʕ nʒy.s hrdw

‘As for all possessions, without exception, that are in my house, they will be for my wife and her children.’

14. P. Cairo J 65739, 17 (= *KRI* II, 801, 12): oath.

‘If witnesses accuse me, and some property belonging to the lady Baketmut is found among this silver that I have given for this slave, and that I have concealed it,

iw.i r 100 n sht – iw.i šw.k(wi) im.s

I will receive a hundred blows (with a stick) and I will be deprived of her (= she will be confiscated from me).’

15. P. BM 10053, v° 3, 5 (= *KRI* VI, 758, 16-759, 1).

iry.f ʕnh n nb ʕ.w.s. iw bn mʒʕt pʒ dd.tw.i nb iw.i di.k(wi) tp ht

‘He swore an oath by the lord l.p.h.: “And,¹⁷² if everything I said is not true, I will be put on the stake.”’

¹⁷² The beginning of the oath has not been transcribed by the scribe, only the essential clause was noted down.

20. The independent prospective *sdm.f*


The prospective *sdm.f* is the successor of the prospective *sdm.f* of classical Egyptian. In its independent usage,¹⁷³ it is a **subjective, modal** form that is only found in non-narrative contexts where it conveys various modalities, such as the will of the speaker (volitive), a wish (optative), or a polite command (jussive); while the future temporal value is only secondary.¹⁷⁴ It is negated by means of the negative morpheme *bn*.¹⁷⁵

sdm.f ‘he will hear, may he hear ...’ *bn sdm.f*

- Unlike the perfective *sdm.f*, limited to transitive verbs, the prospective *sdm.f* is used in all categories of verbs.
- The non-independent prospective (see *infra* §26) is not a modal form. It is found:
 - in complement clauses following *rdi* (frequent);
 - by itself, in purpose clauses, where it is negated by *tm* (quite frequent);
 - after various prepositions and particles (quite rare).

The following example illustrates clearly the difference between the prospective and the third future:

1. P. BM 10052, 8, 21-22 (= *KRI* vi, 787, 10-13): the vizier questions a thief.


*dd n.f t3ty...ir iw ky(?)*¹⁷⁶ *iy mtw.f sḥḥ.k iry.i* — *dd.f ir iw ky(?)*¹⁷⁶ *iy mtw.f sḥḥ.(i) iw.k (r) irt n.i sb3yt nbt bin(t)*

‘The vizier said to him: “... if someone comes and accuses you, I am determined to act.” — He (= the thief) said: “If someone comes and accuses me, you will inflict on me all sorts of severe punishments.”’ Using the prospective, the vizier states his willingness to act if the thief is found guilty, while the latter, using the third future, simply acknowledges the decision of the vizier.

A volitional modality is found in the following three examples:

2. O. Turin 57173, 3-5 (= *KRI* v, 458, 1-3): a man has sold a donkey.


iry.f ḥnh n nb ḥ.w.s. r-dd w3ḥ imn w3ḥ p3 ḥq3 bn mdw.i m p3y 3 bn mdw ky im.f mtw.Ø iri.f iw.f r.i m q(3)b

‘He swore an oath by the lord l.p.h. in these terms: “As Amun endures, and as the sovereign l.p.h. endures, I have no intention of disputing about this donkey, and nobody will be able to dispute about it, and if that happens (*lit.* “and one does it”), it will cost me double (*lit.* “it will be

¹⁷³ Although forming a single morphological entity (Winand, *o.l.*, §343, p. 211), the prospective has, in Late Egyptian, both independent and non-independent applications. For purely pedagogical reasons, the two types of usages have been distinguished and treated separately in this grammar.

¹⁷⁴ See Vernus, *o.c.*, p. 15-26.

¹⁷⁵ It is still possible to find (in texts of the nineteenth dynasty) the classical spelling *nn*.

¹⁷⁶ On this ambiguous syntagma (circumstantial first present, third future or sequential), see *infra* §33.2.3.

double for me”).” By this oath, the seller, satisfied with the price paid, declares that he has no intention of challenging the sale in the future. In addition, he says that nobody else can do it, because he was the sole owner of the donkey just sold.

3. P. BM 10052, 1, 17 (= *KRI* VI, 768, 14-15).


ir.Ø smtr.f m bdn ʿn dd.f i.wšh dd.i

‘He was questioned again with the aid of a staff; he cried (*lit.* ‘said’): “Stop, I will talk!”’

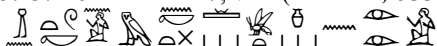
4. P. BM 10375, 13-14 (= *LRL*, 45, 5-6).


iw.i (hr) ʿš.s n.w iw.w (h)r dd iry.n iry.n m pš i.dd pšy.n nb

‘I read it to them (= the letter of the general), they said: “We want to act, we want to act in accordance with what our lord has said.”’

The construction is frequently used in the second person to express a polite command. In this case, it is often preceded by the particle *ih*:

5. O. Berlin P 11247, v° 1 (= *KRI* III, 533, 5).


in.tw.k n.i m nkt n bit n irty.i

‘Will you bring me some honey for my eyes?’


The spelling shows that the *t* ending of the classical prospective of the verb *im* was still pronounced during the reign of Ramses II when the verb was used in the pronominal state.

6. P. Leiden I 369, 9 (= *LRL*, 2, 2).


ih dd.m n imn

‘Would you say to Amun ...?’


7. P. Northumberland I, v° 6 (= *KRI* I, 240, 4).


ih di.k in.tw n.i mry-ms wʿ n ʿw(ty) dmʿ

‘Will you get Merymose to bring me a roll of papyrus?’

It is this jussive nuance that is conveyed by the construction found at the end of letters sent by a superior to a subordinate:

8. P. BN 197, III, v° 3 (= *LRL*, 34, 14): from the general in chief to the scribe of the Tomb.


ih rh.k se

‘You will want to read carefully (the content of the letter).’ The meaning being: ‘Will you take into account?’ or ‘Will you take due note (of it)?’



O. Berlin P 11247, v° 1

The optative modality is often used in the third person in greetings, compliments, curses, and so on.

9. P. ESP, C, 16 (= *KRI* vi, 520, 11).



ḥsy twtn imn-r nsw ntrw ḥsy twtn mntw

‘May Amun-Ra, king of the gods reward you; may Montu reward you!’

10. P. BN 197, VI, 7-8 (= *LRL*, 64, 9-10).



hr š n.k imn ḥst

‘And may Amun be a pilot for you!’

11. P. Ashmolean Museum 1945.96 (= P. Adoption), v° 6-7 (= *KRI* vi, 738, 1-3).



nk sw š nk š ḥmt.f pš nty iw.f (r) dd bšk r wš im.w

‘May a donkey violate him, may a donkey violate his wife, whoever will treat as a slave one among them!’ (*lit.* ‘who will say “this is a slave” against one of them’).

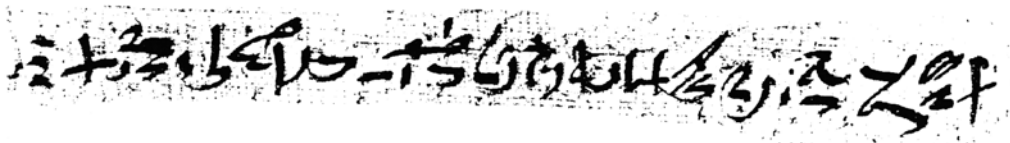
Greetings at the end of a letter to an equal or a superior:

12. P. Turin 1974 + 1945, v° 7 (= *LRL*, 40, 6).



nfr snb.k


‘May your health be good!’



P. Northumberland I, v° 6



21. The imperative

21.1 Affirmative forms


Regular forms are constructed directly from the root, which is quite frequently preceded by a prosthetic yod almost always written as , but sometimes with the sign for the mouth. In principle, there is no gender or number ending.¹⁷⁷

i.sḏm (sw) ‘listen (to) (sg. and pl.) (it)’

There are two irregular forms:

- the imperative form of the verb *iy / iw* ‘come’ is  *my* ‘come’ (sg. and pl.);
- the imperative form of the verb *rdi* ‘give’ is  *imi* ‘give’ (sg. and pl.).

The direct object, when pronominal, is expressed by a dependent pronoun, which allows one to distinguish the imperative from the infinitive. In some cases, above all with the verb *rdi*, the dependent pronoun can be replaced by the ‘new direct object pronoun’.¹⁷⁸

▪ In practice, it is not always easy to distinguish between dependent and suffix¹⁷⁹ pronouns, given the ambiguity of some spellings. In particular, care must be taken not to confuse the dependent pronoun *wi*, written simply , with the suffix *i*.

1. P. BM 10052, 1, 17 (= *KRI* VI, 768, 14-15).



iri.Ø smty.f m bḏn ʿn dd.f i.wšḥ dd.i dd n.f tšty i.dd pš i.iri.k

‘He was questioned again by means of a staff. He said: “Stop, I will talk!” The vizier said to him: “Relate what you did.”’

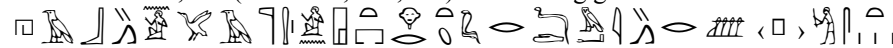
2. O. Gardiner 54, 5 (= *KRI* V, 473, 11): concerning a jenny.



r-ḏd i.in se

‘Saying: “Bring it.”’

3. P. Gardiner 4, 5-6 (= *KRI* VII, 339, 8-9): concerning grain.



hšb n.i pš ḥm-nṯr n ḥwt-ḥr r-ḏd my r šsp se

‘The prophet of Hathor has written to me saying: “Come to take them”’ (*lit.* ‘to receive them’).

¹⁷⁷ See, however, example 14 below.

¹⁷⁸ See Winand, *o.l.*, §263-265, p. 156-160.

¹⁷⁹ See Winand, *o.l.*, §262, p. 155-156.

4. O. UCL 19614, 4 (= *KRI* v, 2, 2).

iw.s hr dt n.i w^c mrw r-dd imi se r mryt

‘She gave me a sash¹⁸⁰ saying: “Put it on the shore” (*lit.* ‘Place it on the bank’).

However, the dependent pronoun can be replaced by the new direct object pronoun:

5. O. DM 563, 4 (fig. p. 128): concerning an ox.

r-dd imi tw.f

‘Saying: “Give it.”’

The verb *rdi* can have as direct object a complement clause with a non-independent prospective. The resulting construction is *imi sdm.f*:

6. O. DM 446, 8-9 (= *KRI* III, 383, 13).

imi in.tw n3 tbwt m t3 wnwyt

‘Have the sandals brought within the hour!’ (*lit.* ‘Cause that one brings ...’).

In the foregoing syntagma, the complement clause can employ the verb *rdi*:

7. P. Turin 1977, 4-6 (= Bakir, *Epistolography*, pl. 26 and xxxiii).

hr ir p3 h3b (i).iri.k hr t3y.k mwt r-dd se mwt iw.k hr dd imi di.tw p3 hr (i).wn hr pr n.s n t3y.i snt

‘And, as for what you wrote about your mother saying: “She is dead,” you requested: “Let that the income that was paid to her (*lit.* ‘went out for her’) be given to my sister.”’

The imperative can be reinforced by various expressions, which are:

- the particle $\ominus \text{ } tw$ – in reality the dependent pronoun whose origin was forgotten;
- the ‘ethical’ dative *n.k* or *n.tn*, especially in literary texts;
- the particle *my*, during the second half of the 20th dynasty.

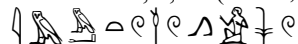
8. P. BM 10052, 6, 9 (= *KRI* vi, 782, 11).

iw.w (hr) dd n.i imi tw p3y hd

‘They said to me: “Give then this silver.”’

¹⁸⁰ See Janssen, *CP*, p. 286.

9. Wenamun, 2, 73 (= *LES*, 74, 14).



imi tw wd.i se

‘Allow then that I send him (off).’


10. Horus and Seth, 3, 12 (= *LES*, 41, 2-3).



iw.sn hr dd n.f pry n.k r-bl

‘They said to him: “Go out then!”’ (*lit.* ‘Go, for yourself, outside’).

11. P. BM 10403, 3, 27 (= *KRI* vi, 833, 3).



i.dd my n.i rmj i.ptr.t

‘Tell me, please, whom you saw’ (*lit.* ‘the people that you saw’).

12. P. DM v, 2-3 (= *KRI* vi, 266, 1).



ih r.k h3b my n.i p3 shr h3ty.k q.i im.f

‘What’s up with you? Tell me, please, your thoughts that I may understand them’ (*lit.* ‘It is what about you? Send to me, please, (about) the state of your heart so that I (may) enter therein’).

21.2 Negative forms

21.2.1 General case

The negation of *i.sdm* (*se*) ‘listen (to it)’ is:

m iri sdm. (f) ‘do not listen (to) (sg. and pl.) (it)’

where *m* is the imperative of the negative verb *imi*, *iri* the negative verbal complement (or infinitive) of the auxiliary *iri*, and *sdm. (f)* the infinitive of the verbal expression, followed sometimes by a pronominal direct object.¹⁸¹

13. P. Berlin P 8523, 8-11 (= Allam, *HOP*, pl. 76).

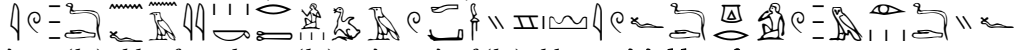


m iri nhm t3y zht m-di p3y. (i)-nb-m-ḥdd — swd se n.f imi sk3.f se

‘Do not take this field away from Paynebemadjed; entrust it to him, let him cultivate it.’

¹⁸¹ See Gardiner, *EG*, §340.2 and §341, p. 260-261.

14. P. BM 10052, 12, 5 (= *KRI* VI, 793, 7-8).


iw.w (hr) dd n.f nzy.k rmt (hr) t3 imntt iw.f (hr) dd gr m iri dd.tw.f

‘They said to him: “Your people plunder the West.” He replied: “Shut up, do not say it!”’

Note the spellings of *gr* and of *m iri* that attempt to make the imperative plural.

15. P. Cairo 58057, 6-7 (= *KRI* I, 238, 12).


m iri it3.(i) r t3 qnbt

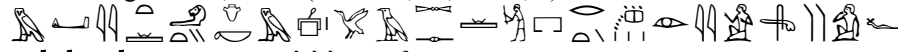
‘Do not drag (me) to the court.’

21.2.2 Special case: the verb *rdi*

Most often, the negative imperative of the verb *rdi* is not periphrased:¹⁸²

m dy ‘do not give’ ‘do not place’

16. P. Bologna 1086, 20-21 (= *KRI* IV, 80, 16-81, 2).


m dy h3ty.k m-s3 p3 ts-prt iri.i smtr.f

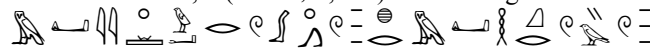
‘Do not worry about (*lit.* ‘do not put your heart behind’) the seed-sowing form: I have examined it.’

Consequently, the negation of *imi sdm.f* ‘have him hear, let him hear’ is:

m dy sdm.f ‘do not let him hear’

where *m* is the imperative of the negative verb *imi*, *dy* the negative verbal complement of the verb *rdi*, and *sdm.f* the non-independent prospective having the role of a direct object (complement clause).

17. P. Turin 1972, 4 (= *LRL*, 8, 7-8): concerning recruits.


m dy wr.w — hr m dy hqr.w

‘Do not let them escape and avoid them becoming hungry’ (*lit.* ‘Do not let that they run away and do not let that they are hungry’).

Remark: It is possible to find examples where this construction is periphrased, in which case the resulting construction is the general case: *m iri dit sdm.f*.

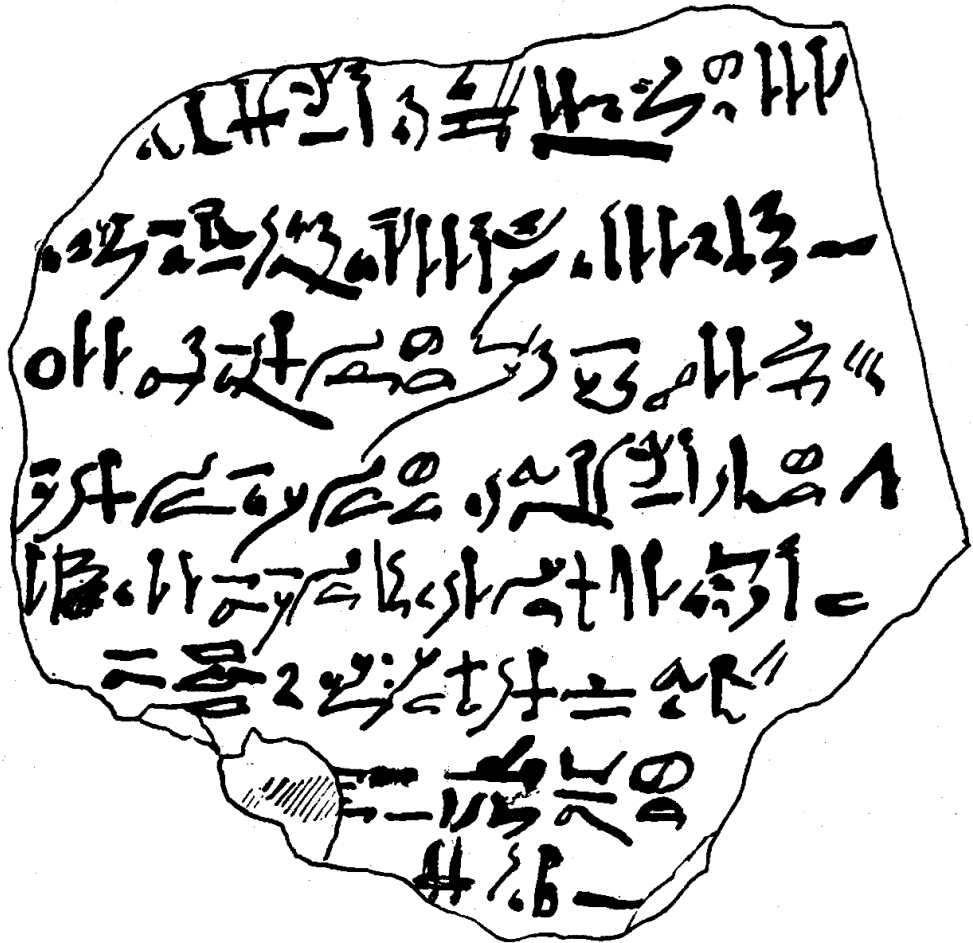
¹⁸² On the numerous spellings’ variants see Černý-Groll, *LEG*, §25.2.5, p. 358.

18. Wenamun, 2, 53 (= *LES*, 72, 8-9).



m iri dit ptr.i se

'Do not make me see it (= the grave).'



O. DM 554, r^o (cf. p. 67, 185, 198, 223, 228)

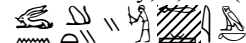
22. The existential predication

22.1 Affirmative forms

These use the verb *wnn* ‘to exist,’ which in this case retains its full meaning. The verb is always in the form *wn*, and its subject, always nominal, is never defined, because its definition presupposes its existence. Such forms have no temporality. The theoretical minimal sentence, which is always accompanied by an adverbial and/or prepositional expansion, is:

wn A ‘A exists,’ ‘there exists an A,’ ‘there is an A’

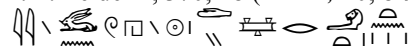
1. P. Orbiney, 3, 5-6 (= *LES*, 12, 8).



wn phty [ʕʕ] *im.k*

‘There is great strength in you.’

2. P. Leiden I, 370, 18 (= *LRL*, 10, 8-9).



yʕ wn hrw dy r-ḥst.tn

‘Because there is a day, there, before you (pl.).’

The syntagma is more frequently encountered with the preposition *m-dī* ‘in the hand of, in the possession of,’ which is used to express our concept of **having** something:¹⁸³

wn m-dī.f A ‘He has an A’

3. O. Prague 1826, 6-7 (= *HO*, 70, 2): letter to a woman.



hr wn m-dī.t snw

‘And you have brothers and sisters.’

This syntagma can be preceded by the composite particle *is-bn*, which is used to pose rhetorical questions:

4. P. Anastasi V, 11, 4-5 (= *LEM*, 61, 12-13).




is-bn wn m-dī.k sšw qnw — hr wn m-dī.k šmsw qnw sp-sn

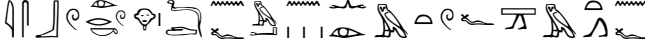
‘Have you not got numerous scribes and have you not got numerous servants?’ In this example, the presence of *is-bn* is understood after the *hr* particle.

¹⁸³ The concept of having a non-defined object (Paul has a dog), which means that Paul is the owner of a dog, is not to be confused with the notion of ownership of a defined object (this dog belongs to Paul), see *infra* §41.


22.2 Negative forms

The negation of *wn* is  (and variants) *mn* ‘it does not exist, there is not,’ which is the successor of the traditional construction *mn wn* sometimes still encountered in texts from the nineteenth dynasty. The minimal sentence with zero subject is also attested:


5. P. Anastasi V, 11, 6 (= *LEM*, 61, 14-15).


is bw iri.k {hr} dd n.f mn Ø mtw.f sm n.f
 ‘Can you not say to him: “there is nothing” and let him go?’

6. P. Turin 1880, 2, 2-3 (= *RAD*, 53, 15-54, 1): discourse of workers on strike.


i.iri.n ph n3 r-h3t hqr r-h3t ib — mn hbsw mn sgnn mn rmw mn smw
 ‘If we have arrived here, it is because of hunger, it is because of thirst: there are no clothes, no oil, no fish, no vegetables!’


7. P. BM 10403, 3, 14-15 (= *KRI* VI, 832, 5-6).


hr mn rmt iw iw.f (r) s'hc.[i]
 ‘And there is no one who will accuse me.’

With *m-di*, the negative correlate of the concept of **having** something is expressed as follows:

mn m-di.f A ‘He does not have A’


8. P. Turin 1887, v° 2, 10 (= *RAD*, 80, 16).



mn m-di.f it
 ‘He does not have grain.’

22.3 Remarks

With defined nouns, the first present is normally used to express a concept similar to the non-existence: the **non-presence**.¹⁸⁴ Compare the following two constructions, which are extracts from same papyrus, with a line interval:

9. P. Turin 2009 + 1999, v° 1, 9 and 10 (= *KRI* VI, 564, 2 and 4).

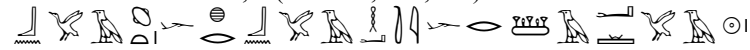

mn h3styw
 ‘There are no foreigners.’


bn n3 h3styw dy
 ‘The foreigners are not there (anymore).’

¹⁸⁴ See Vernus, *Or.* 50 (1981), 440-442, and *RdE* 36 (1985), 153-168.

However, as noted above (§16.2), the adverb is often omitted and *bn* takes on the predication alone:

10. O. Berlin P 12630, 6 (= *KRI* v, 595, 3-4).



bn p3 wt — hr bn p3 ht i r-š3c-(r) p3 hrw

‘Neither the coffin nor the bed are there today’ (*lit.* ‘until today’).

11. P. Salt 124, v° 1, 9-10 (= *KRI* iv, 413, 11-13).



hr wnn iw.tw (hr) dd bn sw mtw.tw irt zbd n hrw n wh3.f

‘and when one said: “It is not there” and one spent an entire month searching for it ...’

23. Second tenses

23.1 Introduction

Second tenses¹⁸⁵ are used in Late Egyptian to shift to marked rheme, that is to say, to bring to **focus**, an adverbial element or equivalent (circonstant) of a plain sentence (see *supra* §12.4.2). These modifiers may be:

- adverbs (example 8);
- prepositional phrases (preposition + noun or noun equivalent; examples 2, 6, 7);
- adverbial clauses introduced by *iw* (examples 3, 4, 9);
- subordinate clauses introduced by a conjunction (example 5).

The second tenses are only attested in discourse.

They are devoid of any temporal reference,¹⁸⁶ but can be imbued with modality.

They are characterised by the presence of a prosthetic yod.

Most often, they are periphrased by the auxiliary *iri*:

theme marked rheme
i.iri.f sdm.(f) + circonstant

periphrased form where *sdm* is an infinitive and (*f*) a possible pronominal direct object

but it can also be non-periphrased:

theme marked rheme
i.sdm.f (se) + circonstant

simple, non-periphrased, form, where (*se*) is a possible pronominal direct object

23.2 How second tenses work

Take the plain sentence: *King Henry II had Thomas Becket murdered in his cathedral*, where *King Henry II* is the theme corresponding to the subject, while *had Thomas Becket murdered in his cathedral* is the rheme consisting of the predicate (had Thomas Becket murdered = predicate construction), followed by an adverbial (*in his cathedral*).

Supposing that the murder of the archbishop is already known and/or that one wants to emphasise the particularly scandalous circumstances in which the crime was committed, the **focus** will be on the **adverbial**, which will be rank-shifted to marked rheme. This is achieved by subjecting the sentence to a syntactic transformation resulting in a restriction of the rheme, which finds itself reduced to an adverb that carries all the rhematic weight, the rest of the sentence being reduced to the rank of theme. The method used consists of transforming the plain sentence in a *cleft sentence*:

It is in his cathedral that King Henry II had Thomas Becket murdered

where '***it is in his cathedral***' is the marked rheme, or focus, which conveys the essential

¹⁸⁵ Also called 'emphatic forms;' the term 'second tense' belongs to Coptic grammar.

¹⁸⁶ It is, however, possible to specify the tense thanks to the use (rare) of the converter *wn*, cf. example 6.

information, while ‘*that King Henry II had Thomas Becket murdered*’ is only the theme conveying little or no new information.

The same is true in Late Egyptian, except that the restriction of the rheme is obtained through a second tense. Given the plain sentence:

**tw.i hr dit diw m t3 hwt-ntr*

‘I give provisions in the temple’ where, as in the English sentence, ‘*tw.i*’ is both theme and subject, while ‘*hr dit diw m t3 hwt-ntr*’ is the rheme consisting of a predicate ‘*hr dit diw*’ (predicate construction) and of an adverbial *m t3 hwt-ntr*.

According to Polotsky and his school of thought,¹⁸⁷ the use of the second tense transforms the entire sentence into a noun, with the sole exception of the adverbial(s). Thus the result is a nominal sentence with an adverbial predicate of the type *r^c m t3 pt*:

**i.iri.i dit diw m t3 hwt-ntr*

‘The fact that I give provisions is **in the temple**’ – ‘**it is in the temple** that I give provisions,’ where ‘*i.iri.i dit diw*’ is a noun equivalent that serves as subject, thus corresponding to the theme, while ‘*m t3 hwt-ntr*’ plays the role of an adverbial predicate, transformed into **marked rheme**.¹⁸⁸

Nowadays there is a tendency to reject the ‘nominalisation’ favoured by the proponents of Polotsky’s theories or, at least, to think that, even if it was so originally, the second tense eventually came to be perceived as no more than a signal to focus the rhematic weight exclusively onto the adverbial(s).¹⁸⁹

23.3 How to translate second tenses

Second tenses can be translated in English in several ways, the aim will be to choose one that best suits the sentence with which one is dealing. Thus the phrase **i.iri.i iy r ptr.k* can be translated using a:

- a cleft sentence: ‘*It is to see you that I came.*’ This translation, although always possible, has the shortcoming of not respecting the word order of the original sentence;
- a correlative system:¹⁹⁰ ‘*If I came, it is to see you;*’
- using a restriction like ‘only...’:¹⁹¹ ‘*I have come only to see you.*’

The last two phrases have the advantage of respecting the word order of the Egyptian sentence, but it is not always possible to use them.

¹⁸⁷ Bibliography in Frandsen, *LEVS*, notes to §85, p. 278-279.

¹⁸⁸ When there are several adverbials, it is, at least in theory, the last one that is rhematised; see Junge, *ZDMG* suppl. II (1972), 33ff. In reality, it seems that things are not so simple since, the set of adverbials, other than the last one, may well be focalised.

¹⁸⁹ The same type of evolution is found in French where, if etymologically the future is a compound tense: *je manger-ai* (infinitive + verb ‘have’), in practice for centuries it has been felt as a simple tense.

¹⁹⁰ Polotsky, *Egyptian Tenses*, §18, p. 8.

¹⁹¹ Others can also be used ‘only ... for,’ ‘solely ... to,’ etc.

23.4 The second tenses periphrased

i.iri.f sdm.(f) + circonstant

They are attested in all verb forms without exception. They can also be imbued of modality, except for those that are employed also in the simple form, used for this purpose.

23.4.1 Affirmative forms

In the following examples the marked theme is shown in bold.

1. P. Turin 1976, v° 1-6 (= *KRI* VI, 599, 9-11).

ptr i.iri.i dit in.(tw) n.k t3y.k ʿzt m ḥsbt 6 ʿbd 3 šmw sw 25

ḥr i.iri.(i) dit in.tw n.k p3 ḥ3r n it irm n3 kḥw nty tw.(f) ḥʿ.k(wl) ḥr in.tw.w

‘See, it is in year 6, the third month of the summer season, day 25, that I have your jenny brought to you, and it is at the same time as I am sending you the other (things), that I have the sac of grain brought to you.’

This example shows that the second tenses are devoid of temporality. The first refers to the past, since the beginning of the letter indicates that the jenny has already been returned, while the second denotes the immediate present (or the immediate future).

2. P. Bologna 1086, 6-7 (= *KRI* IV, 79, 8-10).

ḥr bw rh.i r-ḏd iri p3y.i ʿḏd (r) ph r.k y3 i.iri.i ḥ3b.f r šhm-pḥty

‘And I do not know if my boy will reach you, for I have (only) sent him to Sekhem-pehty.’

3. P. Berlin P 8523, 5-6 (= Allam, *HOP*, pl. 76).

i.iri.i iy r niwt iw ḏd.i n.k bn iw.i (r) dit sk3.k gr

‘It is after I said to you: “I will not let you plough anymore” that I returned to Thebes.’

4. Wenamun, 2, 19-22 (= *LES*, 68, 15-69, 4).

mk i.iri imn ḥrw m t3 pt iw ḏi.f swḥ m rk.f – ḥr i.iri imn grg {n} n3 t3w (r)-ḏr.w

iri.f grg.w iw grg.f p3 t3 n kmt p3 iw.k im hry-h3t – hr i.iri mnht pr im.f r ph r p3 nty tw.i im – hr i.iri sb3yt pr im.f r ph r p3 nty tw.i im

‘See, it was only after having put Seth beside himself that Amun clashed in the sky. And, if it is in their totality that Amun has established the countries, he did not establish them until having first founded the country of Egypt, whence you have come; but it is to reach the place where I find myself that craftsmanship (= techniques) has come forth, and it is to reach the place where I am that learning (= education) has come forth.’

The particle *hr* is absent before the third second tense because the latter forms, together with what precedes it, a paratactic system, that is, a system in which the dependency relationship existing between the two, simply juxtaposed members is not explicit by a subordinating morpheme.

5. P. BM 10083, 2, 5 (= *KRI* vi, 835, 7-8).

i.iri.3 pr m p3 pr n pr-3 3.w.s. m-dr iw p3y-nhsy

‘It was only after Panehesy came that I left the palace of Pharaoh l.p.h.’ or ‘I did not leave the palace of Pharaoh l.p.h. until after the arrival of Panehesy.’

The use of the converter *wn* allows one to give the second tense an explicit past temporal reference:

6. P. BM 10052, 4, 21 (= *KRI* vi, 777, 13).

wn i.iri.w ps p3 hd m pr n A

‘It was in the house of A that they **shared** the silver.’

23.4.2 Negative Forms

There are several ways in which a second tense can be negated.

Given the affirmative construction:

– **i.iri.i dd.f n snq* ‘It is because of fear that I said it.’

If the negation affects the verb itself, the negative verb *tm* is used:

– **i.iri.i tm dd.f n snq* ‘It is because of fear that I did not say it.’

7. Horus and Seth, 15, 12-13 (= *LES*, 59, 6): question to Seth.

i.iri.k tm dit wd3.tw.tn hr ih

‘Why have you not allowed you(rselves) to be judged?’

If the negation affects the ‘nexus’ (predicative link) between the nominalised verbal form functioning as subject and the adverbial playing the role of predicate, the negation *bn* is used, very often reinforced by *iw n3* that can be rendered as ‘definitely.’

– ***bn i.iri.i dd.f n snđ (iwnz)** ‘It is (definitely) not for fear that I said it.’

8. P. DM VII, v° 6.



hr bn i.iri.i tzy.w dy iwnz

‘And it is certainly not here that I took them.’

The negation can affect both the verb and the nexus, in which case we have:

– ***bn i.iri.i tm dd.f n snđ** ‘It is not because of fear that I did not say it.’

9. P. Turin 1880, 2, 20 (= *RAD*, 56, 2-3): *unique example*.



bn i.iri.i tm iy iw mn nkt r in.tw.f n.tn

‘It was not because there was nothing to bring you that I did not come.’

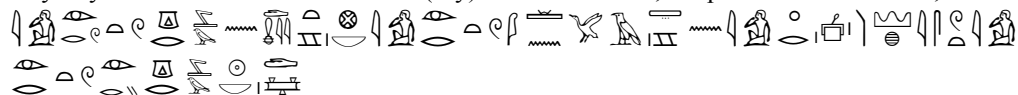
23.5 Modal second tense (non-periphrased)

i.sdm.f(se) + circonstant

These second tenses are only attested with a limited number of verbs, such as: **iw** ‘come’,¹⁹² **ini** ‘bring,’ **iri** ‘make,’ **rđi** ‘give,’ **hzb** ‘send,’ **sbi** ‘depart,’ **šm** ‘go,’ **šđi** ‘exact,’ **dd** ‘say.’ While these syntagmas are frequently called ‘prospective second tenses,’ it is preferable to retain the denomination ‘modal second tense,’ given that their essential characteristic is always that of conveying a modal nuance, which contrasts with periphrased forms of the same verbs that are (in principle) never imbued with modality.¹⁹³ This is clearly illustrated by the following example:

10. Wenamun, 2, 78-79 (= *LES*, 75, 7-9).

‘Say to your mistress that I have heard (say) as far as Thebes, the place where Amun is, that



i.iri.tw grg n(=m) dmi nb (modal second tense) – **i.iri.tw m3t n(=m) p3 t3 n ils** (modal second tense)

– **ist i.iri.tw iri grg r nb dy** (periphrased second tense, non-modal)

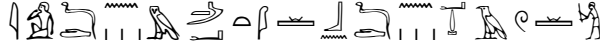
evil is done everywhere, (and that) justice is done in the land of Alasya (only) (*lit.* ‘it is in every place that falsehood is practiced, it is in the land of Alasya that truth is done). Could it be that here injustice is (also) committed every day?’ (*lit.* ‘that one practices falsehood’).

Wenamun stresses the contrast between the reputation of Alasya (Cyprus), that reached the faraway Thebes, where it was said that it was the only place where one tried to do well, and his sad realisation on arriving there, that there was evil there as elsewhere. From the viewpoint of the syntax, it should be noted that the two modal second tenses form again a paratactic system.

¹⁹² Note that the spelling is always *iw* not *iy*.

¹⁹³ Cf. Cassonnet, *LingAeg* 4 (1994).

11. P. Cairo J 65739, 27 (= *KRI* II, 802, 13-14).



i.dd.n m m3't bn dd.n c'd3

'It is in accordance to the truth that we swear to speak: we are committed to not tell lies.'

12. O. Berlin P 10655, 5-7 (= *KRI* V, 573, 15-16): oath sworn by a debtor.



iw.f hr irt 3 nh n nb c.w.s. r-dd i.di.i c'q wpt-rnpt iw di.i p3 hd (n) p3y rmt n.f

'He took three oaths by the lord l.p.h. saying: "I have no intention of letting the New Year come than after having given to this man his money." In other words: "Indeed, the New Year will not come before I have paid this man!"'

The construction is negated by means of the negative morpheme *bn*, although it is very rare:

bn i.sdm.f(se) + adverbial

13. P. Turin 1880, v° 6, 4-5 (= *RAD*, 48, 11-12).



w3h imn w3h p3 hq3 c.w.s. bn i.in.tw t3y.i 3 hrd hr.i

'As Amun endures, as the sovereign l.p.h. endures, if one wants to bring my three heirs (to appear before a court), it will not be because of me.'

23.6 Other second tenses

It is possible to find, especially in texts of the nineteenth dynasty, vestiges, more or less altered, of the second tenses in use in Middle Egyptian.¹⁹⁴

Thus, when intransitive verbs – which cannot have a perfective *sdm.f* – show a *sdm.f* form with a **past** nuance¹⁹⁵ accompanied by an adverbial, this is classified as a second tense deriving from the 'emphatic' *sdm.n.f* of classical Egyptian.

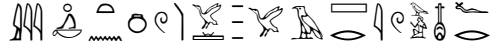
14. P. Chester Beatty VII, v° 1, 7.



hr sdr.f hr p3y.f h'ti m-hnw n pr.f

'And it is on his bed, at home (*lit.* 'inside his house'), that he spent the night.'

15. Doomed Prince, 5, 10-11 (= *LES*, 3, 15-16).



ty.k tww p3 šri nfr

'From where have you come, beautiful child?'¹⁹⁶

¹⁹⁴ See Winand, *o.l.*, §407-418, p. 258-265 and §487-494, p. 310-316.

¹⁹⁵ Beware of the confusion with the prospective, which can be found in all verb forms.

¹⁹⁶ Cf. *ty.n.tn tww* 'Whence have you come?' (The Semnah Despatches, 2, 14 = *JE* 31 (1945), pl. III): letter written under Amenemhat III.

Similarly, sometimes it is possible to find a *sḏm.tw.f* form with a past nuance, deriving from the traditional emphatic form *sḏm.n.tw.f*. This rare¹⁹⁷ form should not be confused with the passive prospective *sḏm.tw.f*, which is quite frequent in complement clauses after the verb *rđi*.

¹⁹⁷ Last occurrence under Ramses IV. See *infra* §28.14, example 3.

Handwritten text in a cursive script, likely a historical document or manuscript. The text is written in a dark ink on a light-colored background. It consists of approximately 15 lines of text, with some lines starting with a large, decorative initial letter. The script is dense and difficult to decipher without specialized knowledge of the language or dialect used.

24. Independent forms: recapitulation

24.1 Table of the main independent forms

Perfective¹⁹⁸

sḍm.f *bwpwy.f sḍm*

First Present

sw dy *bn sw dy*
sw m p3 pr *bn sw m p3 pr (iwn3)*
sw ḥr sḍm *bn sw ḥr sḍm*
sw m ʕq²⁰⁰ *bn sw m ʕq*
sw stp.Ø²⁰¹ *bn sw stp.Ø*
 bwpwy.tw stp.f
sw ʕq.Ø *bwpwy.f ʕq*
sw nfr.Ø *bn sw nfr.Ø*

Aorist

(hr-sḍm.f) *bw iri.f sḍm*

‘Not yet’

bw iri.t.f sḍm
bw sḍmy.t N

Third Future

iw.f r sḍm *bn iw.f r sḍm*
iri N r sḍm *bn iri N r sḍm*

Prospective

sḍm.f *bn sḍm.f¹⁹⁹*

Imperative

(i).sḍm (sw) *m iri sḍm.(f)*

Predication of existence (to have)

wn (m-di.f) A *mn (m-di.f) A*

Second tense

i.iri.f sḍm.(f) + *i.iri.f tm sḍm.(f) +*
adverbial *adverbial²⁰²*
 bn i.iri.f sḍm.(f) +
 adverbial (iwn3)²⁰³

i.sḍm.f + *bn i.sḍm.f +*
adverbial *adverbial*

¹⁹⁸ Limited to transitive verbs. Intransitive verbs express the past by means of the first present with a pseudo-participle as predicate: example *sw mwt.Ø* ‘he died,’ see *infra* §24.3.2.

¹⁹⁹ If the prospective is non-independent, the negation is *tm.f sḍm*.

²⁰⁰ Only (intransitive) verbs of motion.

²⁰¹ Transitive verbs, expresses the passive.

²⁰² Negated verb.

²⁰³ Negated nexus.

24.2 Conjugation of transitive verbs

Affirmative forms

Active voice

<i>wəh.f</i>	he placed (narrative context) he has placed (non-narrative context)
<i>wn wəh.f</i>	he had placed
<i>sw hr wəh</i>	he places (habitual) he is placing
<i>wn.f hr wəh</i>	he placed (habitual) he was placing
<i>iw.f r wəh</i>	he will place
<i>wn iw.f r wəh</i>	he would place
<i>wəh.f</i>	may he place

Passive voice

<i>tw.tw hr wəh.f</i>	he is placed (one places him)
<i>wn.tw hr wəh.f</i>	he was placed (one placed him)
<i>sw wəh.Ø</i>	he was placed (narrative context) he has been placed (non- narrative context)
<i>wn.f wəh.Ø</i>	he had been placed
<i>iw.f wəh.Ø</i>	he will be placed

Negative forms

Active voice

<i>bwpwy.f wəh</i>	he did not place (narrative context) he has not placed (non-narrative context)
<i>bn sw hr wəh</i>	he does not place (habitual) he is not placing
<i>bw iri.f wəh</i>	he never places he cannot place
<i>(bw wəh.f)</i>	<i>id.</i>
<i>bw iri.t.f wəh</i>	he has not yet placed
<i>bw iw.f r wəh</i>	he will not place
<i>wn bn iw.f r wəh</i>	he would not place
<i>bn wəh.f</i>	may he not place

Passive voice

<i>bn tw.tw hr w3h.f</i>	he is not placed (one does not place him)
<i>bw iri.tw w3h.f</i>	he is never placed (one never places him) he cannot be placed (one cannot place him)
<i>bn sw w3h.Ø</i>	he was not placed (narrative context) he has not been placed (non-narrative context)
<i>bwpwy.tw w3h.f</i>	he was not placed (one did not place him) (narrative context) he has not been placed (one has not placed him) (non-narrative context)
<i>bw w3hy.t N</i>	N has not yet been placed
<i>bn iw.tw r w3h.f</i>	he will not be placed (one will not place him)
<i>bn iw.f w3h.Ø</i>	he will not be placed

24.3 Conjugation of intransitive verbs

24.3.1 Verbs of motion

Affirmative forms

<i>sw m ʕq</i>	he is entering
<i>sw hr ʕq</i>	he enters (habitual)
<i>wn.f hr ʕq</i>	he entered (habitual)
<i>sw ʕq.Ø</i>	he entered (narrative context), he has entered (non-narrative context)
<i>iw.f r ʕq</i>	he will enter
<i>iw.f ʕq.Ø</i>	he would enter
<i>ʕq.f</i>	may he enter

Negative forms

<i>bn sw m ʕq</i>	he is not entering
<i>bn sw hr ʕq</i>	he does not enter (habitual)
<i>bwpwy.f ʕq</i>	he did not enter (narrative context) he has not entered (non-narrative context)
<i>bw iri.f ʕq</i>	he never enters, he cannot enter
<i>bw iri.t.f ʕq</i>	he has not yet entered
<i>bn iw.f r ʕq</i>	he will not enter
<i>bn ʕq.f</i>	may he not enter

24.3.2 Other intransitive verbs

<i>sw ḥr ḥms</i>	he sits down (habitual), he is sitting down
<i>wn.f ḥr ḥms</i>	he sat down (habitual), he was sitting down
<i>sw ḥms.Ø</i>	he sat down (narrative context), he is seated (non-narrative context)
<i>wn.f ḥms.Ø</i>	he was sitting down (narrative context), he was seated (non-narrative context)
<i>iw.f r ḥms</i>	he will sit down
<i>ḥms</i>	may he sit down

24.4 Final remarks

There is no exact symmetry between affirmative and negative forms:

- *bwpwy.f sdm* can be used as negative correlate of the perfective *sdm.f*, or of some forms of the first present having as predicate a pseudo-participle – particularly with verbs of motion;
- *bw iri.f sdm* (negative aorist) can negate the first present, habitual or general, when one wants to emphasise that the process never occurs or it is impossible, but this construction also serves as a negation of the *ḥr-sdm.f* form;
- *bw iri.t.f sdm* does not have any affirmative correlate;
- *bw sdm.f* is a heterogeneous form that could be the successor of *n sdm.f* – thus representing a doublet of the *bwpwy.f sdm* form – but also a successor of *n sdm.n.f*, thus representing a doublet of the *bw iri.f sdm* form.

Handwritten text in a cursive script, likely a form of shorthand or a specific dialect, arranged in approximately 10 lines within an irregular, hand-drawn boundary.

O. DM 554, v° (cf. p. 4, 54)

Handwritten text in a cursive script, likely a form of Tamil or a related South Asian script. The text is arranged in approximately 15 horizontal lines, with some lines starting with a vertical stroke on the left. The characters are densely packed and show signs of being a historical manuscript. The script is written in black ink on a light-colored background.

NON-INDEPENDENT VERBAL FORMS

Handwritten text in a cursive script, likely a form or document. The text is written in a dark ink on a light background. It consists of approximately 15 lines of text, starting with a large initial character. The script is dense and difficult to decipher without a key, but it appears to be a formal document or a list of items.

25. The continuative forms

25.1 Introduction

Sequential forms are non-independent forms which must lean on another form (independent or not), placed before them. These are, therefore, non-initial forms.

They always have the value of independent or main clauses (never subordinated).

They are devoid of temporality and simply continue the temporal nuance indicated either by the form preceding them, when the latter has one, or by the enunciation's register.

They are negated by means of the negative verb *tm*.²⁰⁴

In Late Egyptian there are two continuative forms: the sequential and the conjunctive.

25.2 The sequential²⁰⁵

This is a construction specific to Late Egyptian, since it has no predecessor in Middle Egyptian and disappears after the 21st dynasty. It can be considered as the 'functional' successor of the sequential *sḏm.n.f* of Middle Egyptian.

iw.f ḥr (tm) sḏm

iw N ḥr (tm) sḏm

- The *iw* of the sequential, just like that of the third future, is an integral part of the construction, but, unlike the latter, it cannot appear in an initial position or after direct indicators of initiality.
- If the preposition *ḥr* is omitted, it should be restored in brackets in the transliteration.
- Unlike the first present (and the third future), the sequential can have only one type of predicate: *ḥr* + Infinitive


The sequential allows events to be related in an **objective and punctual** manner, in their chronological succession (excluding the repetition), making it a form essentially (but not exclusively) **narrative**.

The sequential can lean on various syntagmas, of which the main ones are the following:

25.2.1 Leaning onto an independent form

In this case, the sequential continues the temporal nuance of the independent form.

I. P. Mayer A, 1, 14-16 (= *KRI* VI, 805, 2-5): deposition before a court.


dd.f sḏm. r-dd n3 rmt ḥn. Ø r irt h3w m p3y pr-n-s13 iw.i (hr) šm iw.i (hr) gm p3y 6 rmt i.dd it3y p3y-k3mn q3

'He said: "I learned that the men had left to seize this portable shrine," I went and found precisely these six individuals that the thief Paykamen named.' In this example, the initial form is a perfective *sḏm.f*.

²⁰⁴ The negation, therefore, affects the verb, not the sentence, which remains affirmative; see Gilula, *JEA* 56 (1970), 212, n. 7.

²⁰⁵ See Groll, *JEA* 55 (1969), 89ff.; Junge, *JEA* 72 (1986), 113ff.; Vernus, *DE* 9, 107, and especially Winand, *o.l.*, p. 442-457.

2. P. BM 10326, 5-8 (= *LRL*, 17, 10-12).



hn̄ *dd* *r-nty* *tzy* *š̄t* *tw* *spr.Ø* *r.i* *m-drt* *šmsw* *dhwty-htp* *m* *hsbt* *10* *sbd* *1* *šmw* *sw* *25* *iw.i* (*hr*)
šsp.s *iw.i* (*hr*) *n̄nd̄.k* *m-di.f* *iw.f* (*hr*) *dd* *n.i* *tw.k* *nh̄.ti*

‘Another matter: this letter of yours has reached me through the servant Djehutyhotep in year 10, first month of the summer season, day 25. I received it, I enquired about you with him, and he told me that you were alive.’ This time the initial form is a first present having as predicate a pseudo-participle.

25.2.2 Leaning onto an adverbial clause

The sequential plays the role of apodosis in the correlative system thus obtained.

3. O. Cairo 25725, 1-3 (= *KRI* IV, 417, 6-8): deposition before a court.

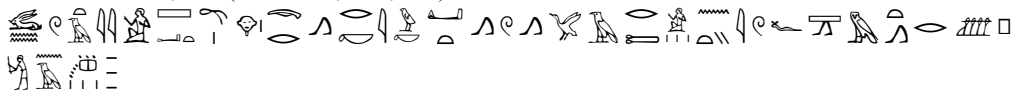


ir *ink* *di.i* *w̄* *n* *dziw* *n* *tzy.i* *šri(t)* *iw.s* *gb.[ti]* – *hr* *ir* *st* *hr* *snb* *iw.i* *hr* *h̄sb* *n.s* *hr* *dd̄* *imi* *tw.f*
iw.s *hr* *tm* *di.tw.f*

‘As for me, I gave my daughter a skirt while she was ill, and, when she was recovering, I wrote to her saying: “So return it!” (*lit.* ‘give it (back)!’) She did not return it.’

The first sequential represents the apodosis of a correlative system, whose protasis contains a first present transformed into an adverbial by the particle *ir* – *hr* limits itself to coordinating all that precedes it (see *infra* §33.2.1.1). On the resulting system leans a second sequential (in this case, negative).

4. P. Gardiner 4, 4-5 (= *KRI* VII, 339, 6-8): discourse.



wnn *tzy.i* *š̄t* *hr* *spr* *r.k* *iw.k* *hr* *dit* *iw* *p̄* *rm̄* *nty* *iw.f* (*r*) *šm* *r* *šsp* *n̄* *it*

‘As soon as my letter will reach you, you will cause the man who will go to take the grain (pl.) to come.’ For this system, see *infra* §34.

25.2.3 Leaning onto a non-verbal circonstant

Most often, the sequential leans onto an adverbial phrase.²⁰⁶ On these constructions, see *infra* §33.5 and §33.6.

5. P. Leiden I 350, v^o, col. III, 13-14 (= *KRI* II, 810, 3-4).

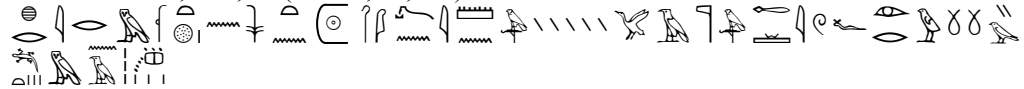


hr *ir* *hr-s̄* *iw.tw* *hr* *h̄s̄* *s̄š* *hr-tl* *hr* *tr* *n* *mr̄t*

‘And then the scribe Hortel was released at noon’ (*lit.* ‘at noon time’).

²⁰⁶ Sometimes a noun with adverbial function.

6. P. Turin 1887, v^o 1, 10 (= RAD, 79, 7-8).



hr ir m ḥsbt 1 n nsw ḥq3-m3t-r^c stp.n-imm^c.w.s. p3 ntr^c 3 iw.f (hr) irt wgg^c š3 m n3 it

‘And in the year 1 of King Heqamaatra Setepenamun l.p.h. (Ramses IV), the great god, he committed many (cases of) misappropriations of grain (*lit.* ‘in grains’).’

25.2.4 Excursus: other continuative-narrative forms

- *wn.in.f hr sdm*: it is found almost exclusively in tales;²⁰⁷
- *ḥ^c.n sdm.f*: derives from *ḥ^c.n sdm.n.f* or from *ḥ^c.n sdm N*;²⁰⁸
- *ḥ^c.n.f hr sdm*: analytical form.²⁰⁹

The last two forms are found only in literary texts and some legal or administrative texts.²¹⁰

▪ With regards to the relationship between these continuative forms and the sequential, opinions are divided. According to Satzinger, *wn.in.f hr sdm* is the literary equivalent of the sequential, whereas Winand sees *wn.in* and *ḥ^c.n* as paragraphs markers – with *wn.in* operating at a higher hierarchical level than *ḥ^c.n*.

7. Doomed Prince, 4, 3-6 (= LES, 1, 5-10): literary narrative.



ḥ^c.n msy w^c n s3 t^cy – tyt pw ir.n n3 n ḥwt-ḥr r š3 n.f š3y – iw.sn ḥr dd mwt.f n p3 msh m r-pw p3 ḥf3w mitt p3 iw

ḥ^c.n sdm n3 n rmt nty r-gs p3 ḥrd – wn.in.sn hr whm.sn n ḥm.f^c.w.s. – wn.in ḥm.f^c.w.s. hr ḥpr iw ib.f dww r^c3t wrt – wn.in ḥm.f^c.w.s. hr dit [qd.tw n.f w^c n pr] n inr ḥr ḥ3st

‘Then a male child was born. The Hathors²¹¹ came to assign him a destiny. They said: “It is by the crocodile, the snake or the dog that he will die!”²¹² When the people who were with the child heard (these words), they repeated them to his majesty l.p.h. and the heart of his majesty l.p.h.

²⁰⁷ Gardiner, *EG*, §470; Satzinger, *NAS*, §2.7, p. 233ff.; Doret, *Narrative*, p. 114, example 17 and 22; Winand, *o.l.*, p. 474-475 and 479-480.

²⁰⁸ Sometimes *ḥ^c.n sdm.n.f* is still attested. Gardiner, *o.c.*, §478 and 481; Černý-Groll, *LEG*, §44.1, p. 452-453; Satzinger, *loc. cit.*

²⁰⁹ Gardiner, *o.c.*, §482; Winand, *o.l.*, p. 474-478.

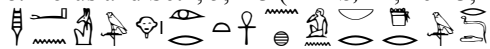
²¹⁰ For Example: P. BM 10355; O. Nash 1 and 2; P. Abbott; P. Adoption.

²¹¹ *Lit.* ‘It is a coming that the Hathors did;’ it corresponds to the ancient form infinitive + relative form, which is only found in stories. Cf. Gardiner, *o.c.*, §392, and *supra* §4.1.1.

²¹² Traditional second tense; cf. the Late Egyptian correlate *i.iri.s mwt <n> dm* ‘it is by the sword that she will die’ (P. Orbiney, 9, 9 = *LES*, 19, 11). See Winand, *o.l.*, §436, p. 277-278.

became very, very sad.²¹³ His majesty l.p.h. had a stone house built for him in the desert.’

8. Horus and Seth, 5, 2-3 (= *LES*, 42, 16-43, 1): literary narrative.



ḥ^c.n swth hr irt ḥnh n nb r-dr r-dd

‘Then Seth swore an oath by the Lord of the Universe as follows: ...’

25.3 The conjunctive

This is a continuative form which, according to Gardiner,²¹⁴ originated from a traditional theoretical construction: *ḥn^c ṣdm ntf (where ṣdm is the infinitive), which became, between the end of the eighteenth and the beginning of the nineteenth dynasty ḥn^c ntf ṣdm. Then, following the disappearance of ḥn^c and the revision of the independent pronoun: mtw.f ṣdm. Therefore, we have:

Late XVIII – early XIX dynasty ḥn^c ntf (tm) ṣdm
current Late Egyptian mtw.f (tm) ṣdm

The conjunctive is a **subjective** form. It is very frequently, but not exclusively, employed in a **jussive context** and/or the **future**, as well as in oaths. It can also be used to describe past hypothetical²¹⁵ or habitual²¹⁶ events. Its use in the narrative allows one to achieve style effects.²¹⁷ Unlike the sequential, it cannot lean onto a non-verbal circonstant. Finally, its presence in the apodosis of correlative systems is debated.²¹⁸

The following is an example from the beginning of the nineteenth dynasty, containing both forms of conjunctive in the same syntactic position, continuing *ih* + independent prospective ṣdm.f.

9. P. Northumberland I, v^o 3-8 (= *KRI* II, 240, 1-6) (fig. p. 38): letter.



ky dd ih di.k hr.k n mry-ms mtw.k ṣdm t3 wpt (i).h3b n.k p3 mr m3c hr.s mtw.k h3b n.f hr rn.k
mtw.k h3b n.i hr snb.k nb ... ih di.k int n.i mry-ms w^c n w(ty) dm^c m-mitt nkt n ryt nfr sp-sn
iw m dy in.tw bin ḥn^c ntk h3b n.i hr snb.k nb sp.sn

‘One more thing: Will you carefully take care of Merymes and take note of the commission about which the general wrote to you and send him (a report) in your signature (*lit.* ‘in your name’) and send me any (news) about your health ... Will you get Merymes to bring me (*lit.* ‘cause that Merymes brings me’) a roll of papyrus and a bit of very good ink – do not let bad one be brought – and send me any (news) about your health.’

²¹³ *Lit.* ‘and his majesty l.p.h. became so that his heart was very, very sad’ (Satzinger, *NÄS*, p. 237).

²¹⁴ *JEA* 14 (1928), 86-96; *EG*, §171 and 300 obs. See also Černý, *JEA* 35 (1949), 25-30. A comprehensive review of the theories on the origin of the conjunctive can be found in Winand, *o.l.*, p. 457-465.

²¹⁵ See example 15 below.

²¹⁶ See example 14 below.

²¹⁷ Example: P. Salt 124, P. Turin 1887, see *supra* §12.3.4.

²¹⁸ See besides the grammars, Borghouts *ZÄS* 106 (1979), 14-24, and Winand, *o.l.*, p. 466-473; however, note P. Anastasi VI, 38 (= *LEM*, 75, 9).

10. P. Cairo J 65739, 4-5 (= *KRI* II, 800, 9-10).



[*iw.f hr*] *dd n.i in n.t tzy cddt šrit mtw.t dit n.i swn(t).s*

‘He told me: “Buy for yourself this young girl and pay me her price.”’ In this example, the conjunctive continues the imperative.

11. P. BM 10100, 14- v° 1 (= *LRL*, 50, 16-51, 3): letter of the general Piankh.



hr inn bwpwy.tn šsp.w iw.tn (r) šm r p3 nty hrret im mtw.tn šsp.w n.s mtw.tn tm nni n(=m) mdt nb(t) ink mtw.tn s3w t3y.i šct iry.s n.tn mtrt

‘And if you have not received them (the servants), you will go (and) find Hereret and you will receive them from her, and you will not be negligent about any matters of mine, and you will keep my letter so that it will serve you as proof.’

In this example, the conjunctive continues a correlative system which apodosis contains a third future.

The use of the conjunctive is particularly remarkable in the protasis of oaths where it continues the **truth value**²¹⁹ of the expression *w3h imn w3h p3 hq3*:

12. O. Petrie 60, 1-v° 2 (= *HO*, 18, 2).



šbd 4 prt sw 21 cnh n nb-imn w3h imn w3h p3 hq3 mtw.i tm qb3 p3 nkt n bw-qn.tw.f r-š3c-(r) šbd 2 šmw ... iw.i hr 100 n šht

‘Fourth month of the winter season, day 21. Oath (taken) by Nebamun: “As Amun endures, and as the sovereign endures, if I do not repay the goods of Bukentuf before the second month of the summer season ... I will receive a hundred blows.”’

Lit. ‘Amon endures (it is true), the sovereign endures (it is true) and I do not pay the goods of B. before the second month of the summer season (it is true), then I will receive one hundred blows (it is true).’ The only thing to do to render false the realisation of the beating is to render false the non-payment, thus to pay by the deadline.

13. Mès, N 35 (= *KRI* III, 431, 6-7).



ddt.n cnh nt niwt t(3)-nt-p3-ih3y w3h imn w3h p3 hq3 mtw.i dd c3 iw.i r phwy pr

‘What the lady Tanetpaihay said: “As Amun endures, and as the sovereign endures, if I tell lies, I will be relegated to the back of the house”’ (that is to say, among the slaves).

²¹⁹ The *šdm.f* in the expression is not the prospective but the **indicative** (old usage) because the endurance of Amun and of the sovereign could not be doubted by the Egyptians of the time.

The following is an example illustrating the use of the conjunctive to describe habitual events:²²⁰

14. P. Gurob, 2, 6-8 (= *RAD*, 14, 11-15, 2): concerning students.



iw.w m h3styw mī-qd n3 (i).wn.tw hr in.tw.w n.n m h3w R mtw.w dd n.n wn.n m ḥw m n3 prw n n3 srw mtw.w it3 mtrt mtw.w rḥ iri p3 dd.tw n.w nb

‘Given that these are foreigners like those that were sent to us in the time of R(amses II), who told us: “We were in service in the houses of officials,” (who) received (*lit.* ‘taking’) an education, and learned to do everything that they were told.’

The use of the conjunctive after a perfective *sdm.f* should also be noted.²²¹ In the following example, the possible author of the denunciation having been killed, it was impossible to use the sequential, an objective form, to describe his conduct.

15. P. Mayer B, 8-9 (= *KRI* VI, 516, 2-4).



iw.f (hr) dd n.n hdb p3 ms-hr irm p3 b3k šri i.wn irm.n mtw.f tm di.tw.n r-bl i.n.f n.n

‘He replied to us: “the native of the tomb, and the young servant that was with us, were killed, and (so) he could not denounce us,” so he said to us.’

²²⁰ See Wenté, *JNES* 21 (1962), 304-311. Other examples: P. Orbiney, 1, 3-10 = *LES*, 9, 14-10, 15; Truth and Falsehood, 5, 4 (= *LES*, 32, 15), etc.

²²¹ Another example following *bwpyw.f sdm*, where the conjunctive expresses feint outrage: P. Anastasi VI, 18 (= *LEM* 73, 15-16).

26. The non-independent prospective *sdm.f*

In a functionally dependent role, the prospective *sdm.f* ceases to be imbued with modality. Its main applications are:

26.1 In complement clauses following all forms of the verb *rdi*

1. P. BM 10052, 13, 17-18 (= *KRI* VI, 796, 12-13).

bn iw.i (r) dit q pzy rmt r pzy.i pr

‘I will not let this man enter into my home (i.e. marry my daughter)’ (*lit.* ‘I will not allow that this man enters ...’).

▪ No negation attested; if necessary, it is the verb *rdi* which is used in the negative form.

26.2 In purpose clauses

2. P. DM v, 2-3 (= *KRI* VI, 266, 1).

h3b my n.i p3 shr h3ti.k q.i im.f

‘Tell me, please, your thoughts that I may understand them.’ (*lit.* ‘Send to me, please, (about) the state of your heart so that I (may) enter therein’).

The construction is negated by means of *tm*:

3. O. Nash 1, v° 12-16 (= *KRI* IV, 317, 9-13).

iri pzy.i nb r dit iry.tw sb3(yt) n t3y st-hmt r(i).it3y p3 hl m-mitt p3 wsb tm kt st-hmt mi-qi.s whm iri m-mitt

‘My lord will cause a punishment to be inflicted on this woman who stole the pick and the censer, so that another woman like her does not act so again.’

26.3 In subordinate clauses introduced by a preposition or a conjunction

The main prepositions governing these subordinate clauses are *m-dr*, *m-ht*, *r-tnw*.

4. P. Turin 1880, 2, 18-19 (= *RAD*, 55, 15-16).

hd in t3ty t3 m-dr iw.f r it3 n3 ntrw n r sy r p3 hb-sd

‘Return to the north by the vizier Ta, after his coming to take the gods of the southern province to the Sed festival’ (*lit.* ‘Returning ... by the vizier Ta, after he came ...’).

5. P. BM 10417, v° 3 (= LRL, 28, 4-5).



tw.i (hr) wꜣh.k m-bꜣh imn-hꜣp ʿ.w.s. r-tnw hꜣy.f

‘I place you before Amenhotep 1.p.h. each time that he appears.’

- No negative forms attested.
- Dependent clauses containing *m-dr* or *m-ht* may be found in the protasis of correlative systems introduced by *ir*, see *infra* §33.2.2.3.
- It is also possible to find the prospective after the particle *ir*, see *infra* §33.2.1.2.2, and in the *hr-sdm.f* form, see *supra* §17.6.



27. The participles


These are adjectival forms of the verb, equivalent to relative clauses where the subject is identical to the antecedent. They can be either active or passive.

27.1 Active participles

27.1.1 Morphology²²²

They are invariable in gender and number, and do not have any special endings.

Quite frequently they are preceded by a prosthetic yod  (example 3), sometimes written with the mouth sign  (example 1). This prosthetic yod disappears, in principle, when the participle is nominalised and defined by an article or a demonstrative.

Active participles can be periphrased by the verb *iri*. This, in principle, is required for verbs which stem comprises more than three radicals,²²³ for example: P. Turin 1875, 5, 1 (=KRI v, 356, 12):  (*i.iri w3w3* ‘who plotted,’ while it is optional for other verbs (example 2).

27.1.2 Syntax

The antecedent of the resulting relative clause must be **defined**, either by a proper noun, a personal pronoun, a noun defined by an article, a demonstrative, a possessive, a suffix or *nb*.²²⁴

The direct pronominal object, if there is one and it is pronominal, is, in general, indicated by the dependent pronoun (example 1), and a suffix pronoun attached to the infinitive if the participle is periphrased (example 2).

The negation having disappeared, *nty bwpwy.f sdm* is used instead; see *infra* §29.7.

• **The active participle** of the verb *wmn*, (*i.wn*), **has a special role: it serves to transpose into the past sentences formed with *nty***, see below §30.2.

27.1.3 Values

The active participles of verbs with three, or fewer, radicals have a **past** temporal value in their **simple participial form** – the point of reference being, in the narrative, the time of the events narrated, and, outside the narration, the time of the statement. When **periphrased**, these participles possess the temporal value of the **habitual present** or of the **general present**. This distinction does not apply to verbs which require the use of a periphrastic construction.

27.1.4 Usage

With the value of a **relative clause** in real cleft sentences:

1. O. Nash 1, 8 (= KRI IV, 316, 2).



m-biz bn ink r(-i).itzy se

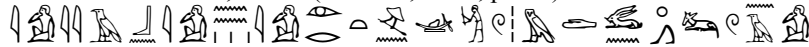
‘No, it is not I who stole it.’

²²² See Winand, *o.l.*, p. 343-364.

²²³ See *supra* §13.2. Some exceptions: *ttt*, *smtr*, etc.

²²⁴ See *supra* §1.2, 4.2 and §6.1.

2. P. Turin 1978/208, v° 1-2 (= Allam, *HOP*, pl. 97).



y3 bn inn i.iri hn.w m-dwn iwn3

‘For it is not us who usually transport them (= the goods).’ In this example, the participle is periphrased and expresses the habitual present.

With the value of an attributive **adjective**:

3. Wenamun, 1, 20 (= *LES*, 62, 16-63, 1).



ir p3 i.ity tw ntk se

‘As for the thief who robbed you, he belongs to you.’

4. Wenamun, 2, 38-39 (= *LES*, 70, 16-71, 1): narrative.



iw p3y.f ipwty (i).sm r knu (hr) iy n.i r h3r n (=m) 3bd 1 prt

‘His envoy who had gone to Egypt returned to me in Syria in the first month of the winter season.’ Being a narrative context, the point of reference is the time of the events narrated.

As a **noun**:

5. P. BM 10383, 1, 5 (= *KRI* VI, 834, 2-3).



dd.f b(w)p(w)y.i ptr p3 hpr m-di.f

‘He said: “I did not see what happened to it.”’

27.2 Passive participles

They are fairly infrequent and, above all, only used with a limited number of verbs, the main ones being *iri* ‘make,’ *rdi* ‘give,’ *in* ‘fetch,’ and *gmi* ‘find.’ Contrary to what has been stated,²²⁵ they are encountered in letters, and this only until the end of the 20th dynasty.

27.2.1 Morphology²²⁶

They show no distinction in gender and number.

They can have a prosthetic yod which, in principle, disappears after the article. This yod occurs less often than with the active participles.

They frequently have a characteristic ending $\overline{\text{𓂏}} : \overline{\text{𓂏}} \overline{\text{𓂏}} : \overline{\text{𓂏}} \overline{\text{𓂏}} \overline{\text{𓂏}} i.iryt$ ‘which was done’ (P. Mayer A, 12, 12); $\overline{\text{𓂏}} \overline{\text{𓂏}} \overline{\text{𓂏}} : \overline{\text{𓂏}} \overline{\text{𓂏}} \overline{\text{𓂏}} i.dyt$ (P. Mayer A, 13, B1) or $\overline{\text{𓂏}} \overline{\text{𓂏}} \overline{\text{𓂏}} ddy$ (P. Turin 1880, r° 3, 2) ‘which was given.’

They are never periphrased and, consequently, always possess a past temporal value.

27.2.2 Syntax

Unlike the active participles, the antecedent of passive participles can be undefined. The agent, if

²²⁵ Černý-Groll, *LEG*, p. 477-478.

²²⁶ See Winand, *o.l.*, p. 365-373.

it is expressed, is introduced by the preposition *in*.

27.2.3 Usage

As attributive **adjective**:

6. P. Bologna 1086, 26 (= *KRI* IV, 81, 10-11): letter.

‘Now, as for this Syrian farmer who has been given to you.’

7. P. ESP, B, 15-16 (= *KRI* VI, 519, 4-5): letter.

‘As soon as the letter of Pharaoh l.p.h., your lord, will reach you, you will receive this galena which is returned to you.’

8. P. Turin 1875, 6, 1 (= *KRI* V, 359, 14-16): statement’s heading.

‘Individuals to whom a punishment has been inflicted, consisting of mutilation of the nose and ears, for having rejected (*lit.* ‘because of the abandoning they had done’) the excellent instructions that had been given (*lit.* ‘said’) to them.’²²⁷

As **noun**:

– in a thematisation:

9. P. Turin 1875, 3, 1 (= *KRI* V, 351, 6-7).

‘As for all that has been done, it is they who have done it.’ Note the thematisation of the direct pronominal object, and the rhematisation of the subject through a true cleft sentence.

– in a pseudo-cleft sentence:

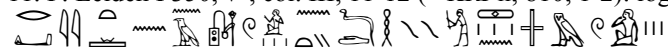
10. Mès, N 10 (= *KRI* III, 427, 4-5): deposition before the Court.

‘It is a false register that has been fabricated against me.’

²²⁷ Another possible reading is: (*i*).*dd.i n.w* ‘that I had given them,’ relative form.

– in a statement’s heading where the participle is employed without the article:

11. P. Leiden I 350, v^o, col. III, 11-12 (= *KRI* II, 810, 1-2): logbook.



rdyt n n₃ sšw nty ddh.tw t n wnm 3



‘What has been given to the scribes who are imprisoned: three loaves to eat.’

28. The relative forms

These are adjectival forms of the verb, equivalent to relative clauses where the subject is different from the antecedent. In principle, there are no passive relative forms.²²⁸

28.1 Morphology

Forms are invariable both in gender and in number, and do not have any particular ending.

They are frequently preceded by a prosthetic yod , which can be written with the mouth sign  (this prosthetic yod, in principle, disappears when the relative form is nominalised and is defined by an article or a demonstrative).

Relative forms can be periphrased by the verb *iri*. In principle, this is required for verbs which stem has more than three radicals, but it is optional for the others.

28.2 Syntax

The antecedent of the resulting relative clause must be **defined**,²²⁹ either by a proper noun, a personal pronoun, a noun defined by an article, a demonstrative, a possessive, a suffix or *nb*.²³⁰

This antecedent is always resumed by a resumptive pronoun, except when it is identical to the direct pronominal object of the relative form, providing that it is not periphrased. In other words, the direct pronominal object of the relative, if there is one, is always expressed, except when the antecedent is identical to the non-periphrased relative form.

The subject of the relative form, being different from the antecedent, is always expressed.

The negation having disappeared, *nty bwpwy.f sdm* is used instead; see *infra* §29.7.

▪ The relative form of the verb *wnn*, (*i*).*wn.f*, has a special role: it serves to transpose into the past sentences formed with *nty*, see *infra* §30.3.

28.3 Values

The relative forms of verbs with three, or fewer, radicals have a **past** temporal value in their **simple form** – the point of reference being, in the narrative, the time of the events narrated, and outside the narration, the moment of the enunciation. When **periphrased**, these relative forms possess the temporal value of **habitual present** or **general present**. This distinction does not apply to verbs which require the use of a periphrastic construction.

28.4 Usage

28.4.1 As attributive adjective

1. P. BM 10053, 2, 9-10 (= *KRI* VI, 757, 3-4).




dd.tw n.f i.dd nbw nb i.qq.k n p3 pr n nbw n nsw wsr-m3^ct-r^c stp.n-r^c w.s.

‘They said to him: “Talk (about) all the gold that you stripped (*lit.* ‘peeled’) in the House of Gold of the King Usermaatra Setepenra l.p.h.”’

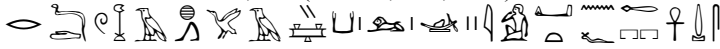
²²⁸ But see P. Turin 1896, 7 and 9 (= *KRI* VI, 734, 13 and 16); Gardiner, *EG*, §377.

²²⁹ Except in statements’ headings, see example 6 below.

²³⁰ See *supra* §1.2, 4.2 and 6.1.

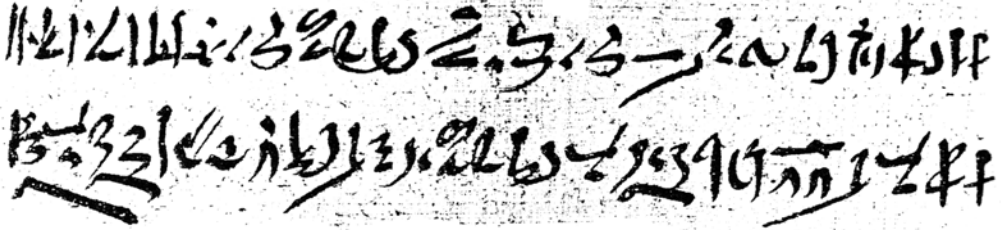
Being identical to the direct pronominal object of the relative, the antecedent, defined by *nb*, is not resumed in it, which, therefore, does not have an expressed direct pronominal object.

2. P. Northumberland I, 7-8 (= *KRI* I, 239, 9-10).



r-dd whz pzy kr 2 i.di n.f pr-εz ε.w.s.

‘Saying: “Claim these two barges that Pharaoh has assigned to him.”’ Same scenario again, since the antecedent, defined by a demonstrative, is identical to the direct pronominal object of the relative.



P. Northumberland 1, 7-8

3. P. Turin 1875, 4, 6 (= *KRI* v, 353, 13-15): narrative.



hrw εz p3-t3w-m-di-immn (i).wn m rwdw ... in.tw.f hr p3 sdm i.iri.f n3 mdwt i.iri n3 rmt w3w3.w irm n3 hmwt (n) pr-hnr

‘The great criminal Patjauemdiamun, who had been controller ... if he was taken (before the Court) it is for having been aware of the conspiracies that individuals had devised with the women of the harem.’ (*lit.* ‘if he was brought, it is for having heard the words that people had whispered’).²³¹

Given that the verb is a quadriliteral one, the relative form is periphrased. The antecedent, *n3 mdwt*, although identical to the direct pronominal object of the relative, is resumed therein by a pronoun. Given the narrative context, the point of reference is the time of the events narrated.

4. P. Bologna 1086, 9 (= *KRI* IV, 79, 12-13).

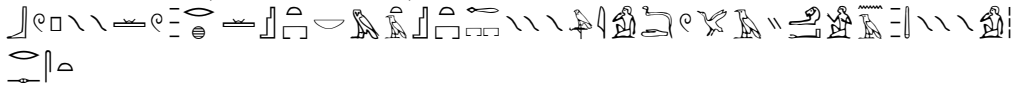


iry.i smtr p3 h3r n pr dhwtw i.h3b.k n.i hr.f

‘I have examined the (case of the) Syrian of the temple of Thoth concerning which you wrote to me.’ The antecedent, *p3 h3r n pr dhwtw*, being different from the direct pronominal object of the relative (that is not present), is resumed by a resumptive pronoun (*hr.f*).

²³¹ This is the last occurrence of the independent passive construction *in.tw.f* with a pronominal subject, successor of the second tense *sdm.n.tw.f* of classical Egyptian. See *supra* §23.6 and Winand, *o.l.*, §488, p. 310-312, and example 741.

5. P. Abbott, 7, 14 (= *KRI* VI, 481, 4-6).



bwpw.w rh st nb m t3 st pr-33 3.w.s. i.dd p3y h3ty-3 n3 mdwt r.s

‘They did not know any tomb in the necropolis of Pharaoh l.p.h., concerning which this Major had uttered the charges.’

The antecedent, being different from the direct pronominal object of the relative *n3 mdwt*, is resumed by a resumptive pronoun (*r.s*).

Exceptionally, the antecedent can be undefined, as in the case of headings:

6. P. BM 10068, 4, 22 (= *KRI* VI, 502, 15).



nbw h3d i.di n3 i33w n n3 rmt n niwt

‘Gold and silver that the thieves sold to the people of Thebes’ (There follows the list of gold and silver objects stolen and then sold by the thieves).

Note. The relative form of the verb *iri* is regularly used to periphrase the infinitive, thus conferring it the value of a perfective. See above example 3: *p3 sdm i.iri.f* and §13.3, §13.4.1.1 and §13.4.2.1.1.

28.4.2 As noun

In this case, as a general rule, the relative form is defined.

7. P. Turin 1875, 3, 2 (= *KRI* V, 351, 7-8).



imi hpr p3w i.iri.w nb r d3d3.w

‘Cause that everything that they have done falls (*lit.* ‘happens’) on their heads!’

In this example, the relative form plays the role of subject of the complement clause and, although defined, is preceded by a prosthetic yod, see above §28.1.

The nominalised and defined relative forms are frequently used in the second member of pseudo-cleft sentences to rhematise the object of the predicative plain sentence (*Fr.* phrase plane sousjacente) (cf. *infra* §42.3).

8. P. BM 10052, 5, 23 (= *KRI* VI, 781, 6).



w3 st w3ty t3 wn.n

‘It is one and only one tomb that we opened’ (predicative plain sentence: **wn.n w3 st w3ty*).

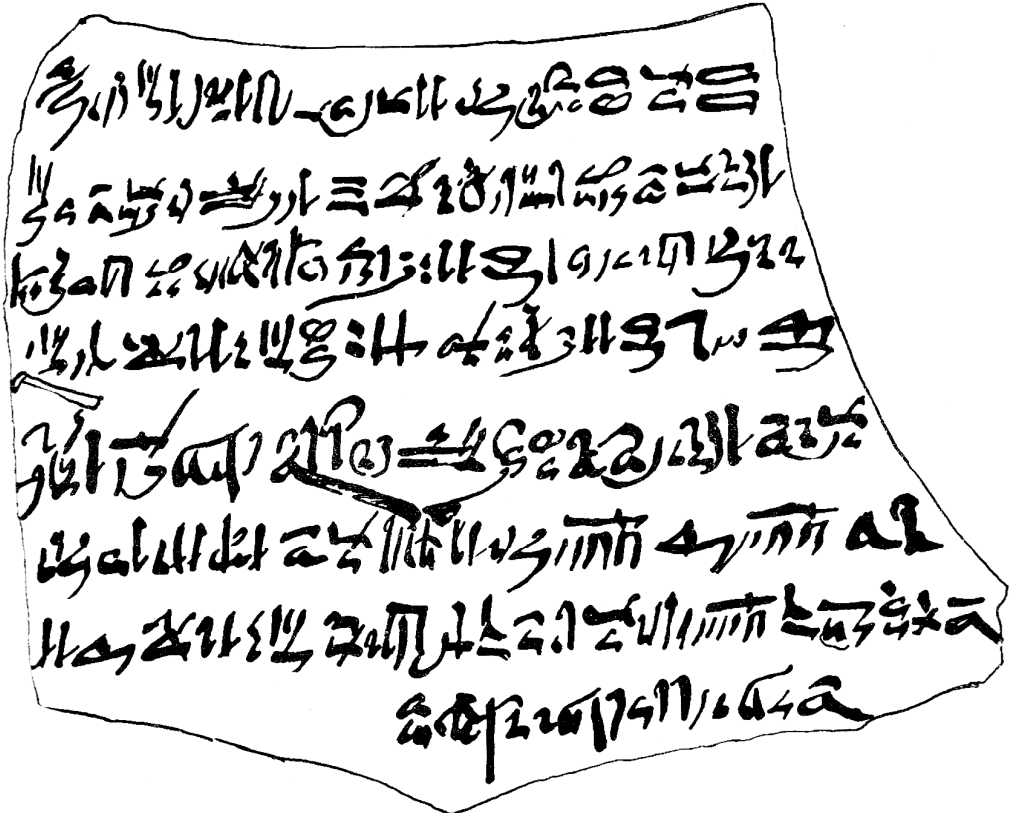
In legal texts, an archaic form is often used to introduce the statement of an individual to the court or that of the court itself, a unique survival in Late Egyptian of the perfective relative form of Middle Egyptian, expressing the neuter using the feminine:

9. P. Cairo J 65739, 19 (= *KRI* II, 802, 1), 19th dynasty.



qbt.n (t3) *qbt sdmj n w'w nshy*

‘What (the) court said (*lit.* ‘chamber of hearings’) to the soldier Nakhy.’



O. DM 592 (*cf.* p. 125)

29. Relative clauses introduced by *nty*

29.1 Syntax

Placed before an independent form, *nty*, invariable in Late Egyptian, turns it into a relative clause with adjectival value.

The independent forms most often preceded by *nty* are:

- the first present,
- the third future,
- the *bwpwy.f.sdm* form.

Theoretically, *nty* is not used before the perfective *sdm.f*,²³² which is relativised through participles and relative forms, or before the prospective *sdm.f*.

▪ Rarely it is also possible to find *nty* before a second tense, an existential sentence or the expression ‘not yet’ (*cf.* below §29.8).²³³

The antecedent of the relative clause must be defined,²³⁴ either by a proper noun, a personal pronoun, a noun defined by an article, a demonstrative, a possessive, a suffix or *nb*.²³⁵

The direct pronominal object of the relative clause, if present, is always expressed even if identical to the antecedent.

29.2 Temporal values

The time of the relativised verb form is relative to the moment of the events narrated in a narrative context, and to the moment of the enunciation in the other instances²³⁶ - shown in bold in the translation of examples 1-9.

29.3 Usage

The relative clauses constructed with *nty* can be employed as **attributive adjectives** or as **nouns**. In the latter case, they are often defined, especially in pseudo-cleft sentences (example 9), but they can also be undefined as, for example, is the case in headings (example 1).

29.4 *nty* + First Present, affirmative forms

29.4.1 The antecedent is the same as the subject of the relative clause

In this case *nty* functions both as relativiser and as subject. The subject of the relative clause is, therefore, unexpressed and the antecedent is not resumed in the relative by a resumptive pronoun.

²³² Examples of *nty* + *sdm.f* are rare. They employ, above all, intransitive verbs and express the general present. See Vernus, *Or* 50 (1981), 439, n. 52 and 53; *l'Égyptologie en 1979*, I, p. 83, n. 15, with references.

²³³ *Nty* can also appear before nominal forms, for example O. Nash 2, v° 4-5 (= *KRI* IV, 319, 5).

²³⁴ Except in headings.

²³⁵ See *supra* §1.2, 4.2 and 6.1.

²³⁶ Satzinger, *o.c.*, p. 129-130.

- p₃ A ... nty dy the A ... who is there
- p₃ A ... nty m-dī.k the A ... who is with you
- p₃ A ... nty wšh.Ø the A ... who is placed
- p₃ A ... nty hr wšh.(k) the A ... who places (you)
- p₃ A ... nty m iy the A ... who comes (verb of motion)

1. Hittite Treaty, 36 (= KRI II, 232, 1): heading.



nty m hry-ib (n) p₃ ʿn n hđ

‘What is in the middle of the silver tablet.’ In this heading, the nominalised relative clause is not preceded by the article.

2. P. Turin 2021, 2, 2 (= KRI VI, 739, 7-8): non-narrative context.



ʿnh-nw-niwt ink-se-nđm tzy st-hmt nty ʿh. ti m-bšh tzy

‘The lady Ineksenedjem, this woman **who stands** before the vizier.’ In a non-narrative context the point of reference is the time of the enunciation.

3. Wenamun, 2, 77 (= LES, 75, 4-5): narrative context.



iw.i (hr) đđ (n) n₃ rm_t nty ʿh. (r)-qr-n.s

‘I said to those **who stood** next to her ...’ Given the narrative context, the point of reference is the moment of the events narrated.

4. P. Salt 124, 2, 9-10 (= KRI IV, 411, 11): non-narrative context.



r rdit rh.tw n₃ hryw nty hr bšk n.f

‘List of the quarrymen **who work** for him.’ Description of habitual activity.

5. Doomed Prince, 4, 8 (= LES, 2, 4-5): non-narrative context.



i_h p₃ nty hr šm m-s₃ p₃ s²³⁷ ʿ₃ nty m iyt hr [t₃] mit

‘What is **that walking** behind the older man²³⁷ **who is coming** down the road?’ (*lit.* ‘it is what this that walks ...’). Interrogative nominal sentence.

29.4.2 The antecedent is different from the subject of the relative clause

In this case *nty* only functions as relativiser, the subject of the relative is always expressed and the antecedent is taken up again in the relative clause by a resumptive pronoun.²³⁸

- p₃ A ... nty tw.k m-dī.f the A ... with whom you are
- p₃ A ... nty tw.k wšh.tw im.f the A ... in which you are placed
- p₃ A ... nty tw.k hr wšh.f the A ... that you place

²³⁷ The article *p₃* shows that the text refers to a man and that the spelling is wrong, cf. LES, 2a, n. 4, 8a.

²³⁸ Following *im* the antecedent is sometimes not taken up again by a resumptive pronoun, cf. example 7.

6. P. Anastasi VI, 32 (= *LEM*, 75, 1): non-narrative context.



p3 rmt nty sw m-di.f

‘The man **with whom he is**’ (And not ‘the man who is with him,’ that would be **p3 rmt nty m-di.f*).

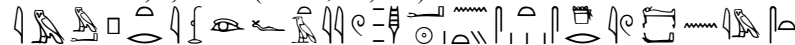
7. Wenamun, 1, 12-13 (= *LES*, 62, 3-4): narrative context.



iw.i (hr) šm r p3 nty p3 wr im

‘I went to the place **where the prince was.**’ Note the absence of a resumptive pronoun as is sometimes the case with *im*.

8. Wenamun, 2, 52-53 (= *LES*, 72, 7-8): non-narrative context.



imi ptr.f p3y.w (m) ḥc nty st sdr.Ø im.s

‘Let him see the (*lit.* ‘their’) tomb **in which they are buried**’ (*lit.* ‘stretched out’).

9. O. Gardiner 165, v° 4-5 (= *KRI* III, 549, 8-9): non-narrative context.



t3 st wti t3 nty tw.k hr wh3.s

‘It is only the she-ass **that you claim.**’ Pseudo-cleft sentence.

29.5 *nty* + First Present, negative forms

The subject of the relative is always expressed, whether it is identical to the antecedent or not, which is always resumed in the relative clause by a pronoun.

10. *Giornale*, 12, 4 (= *KRI* VI, 569, 3-4).



in-hr-ḥc w s3 p3-nfr p3 nty bn sw

‘It is Inherkhau, son of Panefer, who is not here.’ Pseudo-cleft sentence where *bn sw* is the negative correlate of *sw dy* (*cf.* §16.2, example 7).

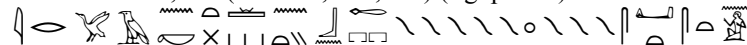
11. O. Mond 175, 1-2 (= *KRI* VII, 381, 8-9).



ptr tw.i cm.k(wi) n3 mdwt qnwt st nty bn m3t im.w iwn3

‘See, I am aware of very many cases in which there is no justice’ (*lit.* ‘that justice is not in them’).

12. O. DM 592, 6-7 (= *KRI* V, 593, 7-8) (fig. p. 122).



ir p3 nkt nty bn pr-3 c.w.s. (hr) dit se n.i

‘As for this (*lit.* ‘the thing’) that Pharaoh l.p.h. does not give me ...’ Note the use of the dependant pronoun to express the direct pronominal object after the infinitive of *rdi* – a usage that will develop in demotic.

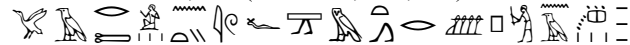
29.6 *nty* + Third Future

The subject of the relative is always expressed whether it is the same as the antecedent or not, which is always resumed in the relative by a pronoun.

- *p3* A ... *nty* (*bn*) *iw.f r w3h* the A ... who will (not) place
 – *p3* A ... *nty* (*bn*) *iw.k r w3h.f* the A ... that you will (not) place
 – *p3* A ... *nty* (*bn*) *iri B r w3h.f* the A ... that B will (not) place

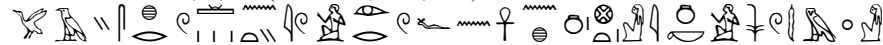
▪ Note that in ‘standard’ Late Egyptian the *iw* following *nty* is always that of the third future and not the circumstantial *iw*. It is only later that the latter starts to be used after *nty*, heralding a usage that will develop during the Third Intermediate Period.²³⁹

13. P. Gardiner 4, 4-5 (= *KRI* VII, 339, 7-8).


p3 rmt nty iw.f r sm r šsp n3 it

‘The man who will go to receive the grain (*lit.* grains).’²⁴⁰ The subject is identical to the antecedent.

14. P. Turin 2021, 2, 10 (= *KRI* VI, 740, 3-4).


p3y shr nty iw.i (r) irt.f n nh-nw-niwt ink-se-ndm

‘This arrangement that I will make in favour of the lady Ineksenedjem.’ The subject is different from the antecedent, which is identical to the direct pronominal object. Similarly:

15. P. Mayer A, 1, 1-4 (= *KRI* VI, 803, 12-16).




n3 i3w ... nty iri hry md3yw ny-se-umn (r) dd smi.w m p3y.w rnrn

‘The thieves ... of whom the chief of the medjay Nesamon will give a list.’ (*lit.* ‘that the chief ... will denounce by their list’).

In the following examples the relative is nominalised and defined:

16. Hittite Treaty 30-31 (= *KRI* II, 230, 11-13).


ir n3y mdt nty hr p3y n n hq ... ir p3 nty bn iw.f r s3w.sn

‘As for these clauses (*lit.* ‘words’) that are (engraved) on this silver tablet ... as for the one who will not respect them ...’

17 P. ESP, C, 29-30 (= *KRI* VI, 521, 8-9).


ir p3 nty iw.tn (r) 3ty im.f iw.tn (r) h3b n.i di.i in.tw.f n.tn

‘As for that of which you will be lacking, you will write to me (so) that I have it brought to you.’

²³⁹ See Vernus, *l'Égyptologie en 1979*, I, p. 82-84.

²⁴⁰ See also *supra* §6.1, example 1.

29.7 *nty* + *bwpy.f sdm*

This syntagma serves as negation of the participles, if the subject of the relative is identical to the antecedent, otherwise it serves as the negation of the relative forms.

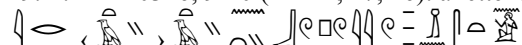
18. P. Ashmolean Museum 1945-95, 2, 7 (= *KRI* VI, 238, 2).



ir p3 nty bwpy.f dit n.i bn iw.i r dit n.f m zht.tw.i

‘As for the one who has given nothing (*lit.* ‘not’) to me, I will not bequeath to him (*lit.* ‘will not give’) any of my property.’ Negation of the participle. The affirmative sentence would be **p3 di n.i*.

19. P. BM 10326, 9-10 (= *LRL*, 17, 16): a letter (*šrt*) has not arrived to destination.



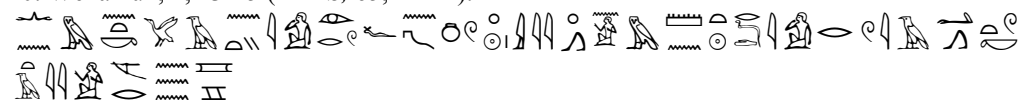
ir <t3y> t3y nty bwpy.w in.s n.i

‘As for this, this is what they did not bring to me.’²⁴¹ Negation of the relative form; the affirmative sentence would be **t3y in.w se n.i*.

29.8 *nty* + *varia* (examples are rare)

nty + second tenses

20. Wenamun, 1, 43-45 (= *LES*, 65, 11-12).



in ntk p3 nty i.iri.f nw (hr) iy n.i m-mnt r-dd rwi tw.k (m) t3y.i mr(yt)

‘Are you (not) the one who spent time coming to see me daily with these words (*lit.* ‘saying’): “Get away from my port!”?’ In this example *nty* is followed by a modal second tense.

nty + existential sentence

21. P. BM 10054, 2, 10-11 (= *KRI* VI, 493, 1-2).

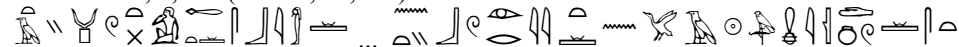


n3 wtw nty wn nbw im.w

‘The coffins in which there was gold’ (*lit.* ‘that there was gold in them’). In principle, it is the existential *wn* that is found after *nty*.

nty + ‘not yet’ in the passive form

22. P. Gurob, 2, 3-4 (= *RAD*, 14, 7-9).



t3y wpt st sb(q)i ... nty bw iry.t Ø n p3-r mi-qd.s

‘This great splendid work ... the like of which has not yet been done for Pre’ (*lit.* ‘that it has not yet been done for Pre like it’).

²⁴¹ Here it is assumed that *t3y* was omitted due to a line change, see Amarna Border Stela U, 12, cited by Groll, *Non Verbal*, example 268, and P. Orbiney, 7, 7-8, where it is not a dittography.

Handwritten text on a trapezoidal fragment, likely a piece of pottery or stone, showing three lines of cuneiform script. The text is arranged in three horizontal lines across the fragment.

Handwritten text on a curved fragment, likely a piece of pottery or stone, showing a single line of cuneiform script.

Handwritten text on a small, irregular fragment, likely a piece of pottery or stone, showing a few characters of cuneiform script.

O. DM 563 (cf. p. 84)

30. Relative clauses introduced by (i).wn or (i).wn.f

30.1 Introduction

The participle or the relative form of the auxiliary verb *wnn* allows one to transpose into the past sentences formed with *nty*. These retain their ‘unmarked’ value, rendered in English with the past tense, which participles or relative forms, which are simply ‘punctual,’ do not have.

Compare

- *p3 A ... i.wn hr w3h* the A ... who placed
with
- *p3 A ... nty hr w3h* the A ... who places
- *p3 A ... i.w3h* the A who has placed, the A ... who placed

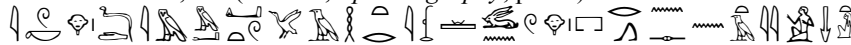
The syntax is exactly the same as for *nty*. The sentences thus transposed are almost always first present or, exceptionally, third future (example 5).

30.2 Relative clauses introduced by the participle (i).wn

They are employed when the subject of the relative clause is identical to the antecedent:

Examples with the first present:

1. P. Turin 1977, 5-6 (= Bakir, *Epistolography*, pl. 26).



iw.k hr dd imi di.tw p3 hr (i).wn hr pr n.s n t3y.i snt

‘You said: “Cause that the income that was paid (*lit.* ‘went out for her’) to her (= ‘to my mother’) be given to my sister.’

2. P. Mayer A, 1, 9-10 (= *KRI* VI, 804, 9-11).



ih p3 shr (n) sm i.iri.k irm n3 rmj (i).wn irm.k iw.tn (hr) irt h3w m n3 prw (n) st3 n n3 nsyw (i).wn w3h. Ø m pr-hd n t3 hwt nsw wsr-m3t-r mr-ïmn ˚.w.s.

‘In what manner did you get (*lit.* ‘it is what the way of going that you made’) with the individuals who were with you when you grabbed the portable naoi of the kings that had been stored in the temple treasury of King Usermaatra Meriamun I.p.h. (Ramses III)?’

3. P. Turin 1875, 6, 2 (= *KRI* V, 360, 3).



hrw ˚3 p3y-bs (i).wn m wdpw

‘The great criminal Paybes, who had been cup-bearer.’

4. P. BM 10054, 2, 10 (= *KRI* VI, 492, 16-493, 1).



i.iri.n wn n3 db3wt m n3 hl n hmt i.wn m qrt.n

‘It is with the copper picks that we had in hand (*lit.* ‘that were in our hands’) that we opened the sarcophagi.’²⁴²

Example with the third future.²⁴³

5. P. Anastasi VI, 21-22 (= *LEM*, 74, 4).



iw.f hr i3 n3 nwt (i).wn iw.i r in.tw.w m-b3h p3 mr pr-hd

‘He seized the materials that I was going to deliver to the overseer of the treasury’ (or ‘that I should have delivered’).

30.3 Relative clauses introduced by the relative form (*i*).wn.f

They are used when the subject of the relative is different from the antecedent. Examples are found only in the first present.

6. P. BM 10054, 2, 8-9 (= *KRI* VI, 492, 13-15).



iw.n (hr) in p3 hd p3 nbw i.wn.n (hr) gm.tw.f m n3 (m) h3yt p3 hnw n wdhw i.wn.n (hr) gm.tw.f im.w

‘We carried away the silver and gold that we (habitually) found in the tombs, and the offering vessels that we (habitually) found there.’²⁴⁴

7. P. BM 10052, 15, 5-6 (= *KRI* VI, 800, 9-10).



ih hr.t t3 mdt n p3y hd i.wn n3 i3w (hr) in.tw.f n r3-ms p3y.t h3y

‘What have you to say (about) the matter (*lit.* ‘it is what – you say – the matter’) of this silver that the thieves brought to Ramose, your husband?’

8. P. Turin 1875, 4, 12 (= *KRI* V, 355, 8-9).



p3y 3 n 3t (i).wn.f r-qr-n.f

‘This Chamberlain with whom he had been.’ Compare with Example 6 in §29.4.2, where the same construction is found with *nty*.

²⁴² It concerns habitual activity.

²⁴³ See Silverman, *Festschrift Westendorf*, 1984, p. 191-196.

²⁴⁴ Understand ‘we carried away (this time) the same loot as in our previous expeditions.’

31. Table of relative clauses (defined antecedent)

	<i>antecedent = subject</i>	<i>antecedent ≠ subject</i>
<i>Present</i>	<p><i>pʒ A ... nty hr wʒh</i> who places</p> <p><i>pʒ A ... nty bn sw hr wʒh</i> who does not place</p>	<p><i>pʒ A ... nty tw.i hr wʒh.f</i> that I place</p> <p><i>pʒ A ... nty bn tw.i hr wʒh.f</i> that I do not place</p>
<i>Imperfect</i>	<p><i>pʒ A ... (i).wn hr wʒh</i> who placed</p>	<p><i>pʒ A ... (i).wn.i hr wʒh.f</i> that I placed</p>
<i>Past</i>	<p><i>pʒ A ... i.wʒh</i> who placed who has placed</p> <p><i>pʒ A ... nty bwpwy.f wʒh</i> who did not place who has not placed</p>	<p><i>pʒ A ... i.wʒh.i</i> that I placed that I have placed</p> <p><i>pʒ A ... nty bwpwy.i wʒh.f</i> that I did not place that I have not placed</p>
<i>Future</i>	<p><i>pʒ A ... nty iw.f r wʒh</i> who will place</p> <p><i>pʒ A ... nty bn iw.f r wʒh</i> who will not place</p>	<p><i>pʒ A ... nty iw.i r wʒh.f</i> that I will place</p> <p><i>pʒ A ... nty bn iw.i r wʒh.f</i> that I will not place</p>
<i>Passive</i>	<p><i>pʒ A ... nty wʒh.Ø</i> who was placed who has been placed</p> <p><i>pʒ A ... (i).wn wʒh.Ø</i> who had been placed</p>	<p><i>pʒ A ... nty tw.i wʒh.Ø hr.f</i> on which I was placed on which I have been placed</p>

32. Adverbial clauses introduced by *īw*

32.1 Introduction

The morpheme *īw* (called circumstantial *īw*) placed before an independent form (verbal or nominal) turns it into a non-independent, non-initial form, having the value of an adverb.

The independent verbal forms more frequently preceded by the circumstantial *īw* are:²⁴⁵

- the perfective *sḍm.f*: examples 1, 11, 13, 19, 20, 22, 23, 24;
- the *bwpwy.f sḍm* form: examples 1, 10;
- the first present²⁴⁶ and its negation: examples 2, 3, 12, 14, 15, 16 (*wn*), 21;
- the negative aorist: example 4;
- the third future and its negation: examples 5, 6, 7, 17, 18;
- the second tenses: example 10;
- the existential sentences: examples 8, 9;
- the correlative system *ir īw.f (?) sḍm* within the protasis, see *infra* §33.2.3, example 20.

When the independent form possesses its **own** temporal value, the resulting sentences with *īw* take on a **relative** temporal value:

- **anteriority** (for example with the perfective *sḍm.f*);
- **concomitance** (for example with most forms of the first present);
- **posteriority** (for example with the third future).

The adverbial value of the resulting sentences allows them to take on the fundamental function of an adverbial clause that could be focused by a second tense. The adverbial clause introduced by *īw* most often follows the main clause, although it can sometimes precede it. In addition to their regular uses, they can also be found in place of relative clauses with an undefined antecedent (in the way specified above), or in place of a complement clause.

Remarks

1. It has been alleged that the circumstantial *īw* could not be employed before the prospective *sḍm.f*,²⁴⁷ yet a few clear examples, because they appear in the negative form (*īw bn* (or *nn*) *sḍm.f*), have been identified.²⁴⁸

2. The morpheme *īw* that can be found before the imperative (almost always negative) is not the circumstantial *īw*, but the parenthetical *īw*, see *infra* §38.1.

²⁴⁵ An example of *īw bw sḍm.t.f*: O. Florence 2625, v° 1 (= Allam, *HOP*, pl. 35).

²⁴⁶ In the affirmative form the suffix pronoun replaces the proclitic pronoun, thus one finds *īw.f* and not *īw sw*. However, there is no change in the negative form, where one finds *īw bn sw*. See *supra* §16.1.1.

²⁴⁷ Frandsen, *LEVS*, p. 15.

²⁴⁸ Doomed Prince, 4, 6 (= *LES*, 1, 11-2, 1); P. Orbiney, 7, 4 (= *LES*, 16, 10); P. Turin 1880, v° 2, 10-14 (= *RAD*, 49, 5-8).

32.2 Used as adverbial clauses

32.2.1 The circumstantial is placed after the main clause (unmarked order, very frequent)

32.2.1.1 General case

1. P. Mayer A, 3, 18-19 (= *KRI* VI, 810, 1-3).



in sft p(š)-n-nswt-tšwy sš bs iw dd dd-m-šnb pr-pš-tšw sdm.i r-dd wn.f m nš swt iw b(w)p(w)y.i ptr.f m irt.i

‘The butcher Paennesuttawy, son of Bes, was summoned (*lit.* ‘brought’) after the trumpeter Perpatchau had said: “I learned that he had been in the tombs, although I had not seen him, with my eyes.”’

► *iw sdm.f* perfective and its negation *iw bwpwy.f sdm*.

2. P. Turin 1880, 3, 15 (= *RAD*, 57, 2-3).



iw.w (hr) š n pš hšty-š n niwt iw.f m snn

‘They hailed the major of the City as he passed by.’

► *iw.f m šq*, first present of verbs of motion.

3. P. Berlin P 3047, 10 (= *KRI* II, 803, 16-804, 1): concerning arable lands.



tš sn n.f hry šnš ny hnš nšy.f snw hmn n rnpt r tšy iw bn st hr dit tšy.i psš

‘The chief of the storehouse Ny took for himself, together with his brothers, for some years until now, without giving (me) my share’ (*lit.* ‘without them giving (me) my share’).

► *iw bn sw hr sdm*, negative first present.

4. O. Berlin P 10627, 3-6 (= *KRI* VI, 155, 10-12).



yš ih pšy.k hpr m pšy šhr bñ nty tw.k im.f iw bw iri mdš n rmš nb šq m msdr.k

‘Well, how have you put yourself (*lit.* ‘hey, it is what your happening’) in this lamentable state in which you are, that no human word can penetrate into your ear?’²⁴⁹

► *iw bw iri.f sdm*, negative aorist.

²⁴⁹ Understand ‘to the point that you are no longer able to listen to reason.’

5. P. Turin 2021, 3, 13-14, 1 (= *KRI* vi, 741, 13-15).



iw.i (hr) dit n.s p3y.i 2/3 [hr p3y.s 1/3 iw bn iri sri srit (r) mdw m p3y shr i.iri.i n.s m p3 hrw

‘I bequeath her my $\frac{2}{3}$ in addition to her $\frac{1}{3}$, so that no son or daughter shall contest this arrangement that I have made today in her favour.’

► *iw bn iri N r sdm*, negative third future with nominal subject.

6. O. Berlin P 10630, 6-7 (= *KRI* v, 565, 5-6).



hr di pth iry.k h'w q3 izwt nfr(t) iw.k m-di.i m it r nhw iw bn iw.i (r) nmh im.k

‘And may Ptah cause that you to enjoy a long life and a happy old age, since you are to me a father for eternity and, thanks to you, I will never be an orphan!’²⁵⁰ (*lit.* ‘I will never be an orphan on your part’).

► *iw.k m-di.i m it*, first present with a prepositional phrase as predicate;

► *iw bn iw.f r sdm*, negative third future with pronominal (suffixal) subject.

7. P. Turin 2021, 3, 3-4 (= *KRI* vi, 740, 11-13).



bn st [sty] (m) p3 in. i nb irm t3y.w mwt iw wn iw.i (r) dit n.w m p3 in.i irm nh-nw-niwt ink-se-ndm hr pr-ε3 ε.w.s. (hr) dd

‘They are not deprived of any of what I acquired with their mother, still, I would have given them from what I acquired with the lady Ineksenedjem, but Pharaoh I.p.h. said ...’

► *iw wn iw.f r sdm*, third future preceded by the past converter *wn*.

8. P. Turin 1887, 1, 10-11 (= *RAD*, 75, 7-8).



iw.f (hr) εq hr p3 ntr iw wn n.f 3 hrw n swr hsmn

‘He entered with the god although he (still) had three days of drinking natron’ (*lit.* ‘although there existed for him ...’).

► *iw wn n.f A*, affirmative existential sentence.

9. O. DM 67, 3-5 (= *KRI* v, 536, 5).



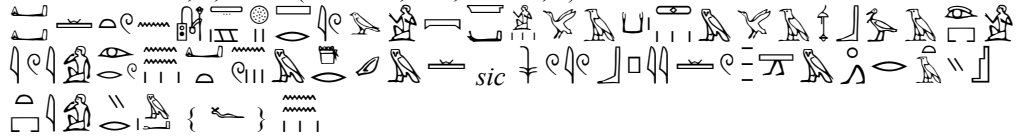
in.f n.i (m) εbd I šmw sw 15 iw mn εht nb m-di.f

‘He brought it (= the donkey) to me day 15 of the first month of the summer season, without having anything in the hand’ (*lit.* ‘while there was no property in his hand’).

► *iw mn A m-di.f*, negative existential sentence.

²⁵⁰ Understand ‘you will never abandon me.’ For *nmh*, ‘to be orphan,’ see *Wb*, II, 268, 11-16.

10. P. BM 10052, 5, 18-19 (= *KRI* vi, 780, 14-781, 1).



dd.tw n sš tštš-šri hry iry-š pš-kšw-m-pš-wbš iw i.iri.n dit n.w m-dr sdm.(w) se iw b(w)p(w)y.w šm r tšy st irm.n

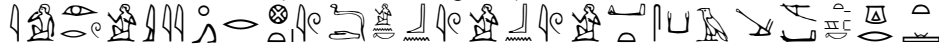
‘(A share of the loot) was given to the scribe Tetisheri and the overseer of the porters Pakauempauba, although we gave it to them only after they had learned (of the looting) since they did not go to this tomb with us.’

- ▶ *iw i.iri.f sdm* (= second tense) + rhematised circumstant;
- ▶ *iw bwpwy.f šm*, negation of *iw.f šm* (see *supra* §16.6.2.1).

32.2.1.2 Special cases

32.2.1.2.1 The adverbial clause is focalised by a second tense

11. P. Berlin P 8523, 5-6 (= Allam, *HOP*, pl. 76).



i.iri.i iy r niwt iw dd.i n.k bn iw.i (r) dit skš.k gr

‘It is after I said to you: “I will not let you plough anymore” that I returned to Thebes.’

12. P. Mayer A, 2, 19 (= *KRI* vi, 808, 3).



dd.f i.iri.Ø hdb pšy.i it iw.i m šri

‘He said: “It was when I was a child that my father was murdered.”’

See also example 20 below.

32.2.1.2.2 The adverbial clause is marked by the particle *hr*²⁵¹

13. Horus and Seth, 10, 5-6 (= *LES*, 50, 14-15).



iw.f hr dd n pš-r-šr-šhty n(=m) šdš bwpwy.i gm hr hr iw gm.f se

‘He said, falsely, to Pre-Horakhty: “I have not found Horus” – and this although he had found him!’

32.2.2 The adverbial clause is placed before the main clause (marked order, rare)

This produces a **correlative system** (or **hypotactic**) in which the adverbial clause, placed at the beginning (**protasis**), precedes the main clause (**apodosis**). The system is almost always preceded by an introductory morpheme which can be *hr* or *ir*.²⁵²

²⁵¹ For *hr iw* see Navailles-Neveu, *GM* 103 (1988), 56, o.

²⁵² Cases where the system, in non-initial position, is preceded by no morpheme are even rarer: P. Sallier I, 9, 6 (= *LEM*, 87, 12) and, perhaps, Wenamun, 2, 70-71 (= *LES*, 74, 9-10).

14. Més, N 10 (= *KRI* III, 427, 4-6).²⁵³



r-dd dnyt n ʿdʒ tʒ iry t r.i hr iw.i smtr.kwi hr-hʒt tw.i gm.kwi hr wʿrt

‘Saying: “It is a false register that has been fabricated against me because when my case was examined previously (*lit.* ‘I was examined before’), my name was found (*lit.* ‘I was found’) on a document.”’

For examples with *ir* + *iw* circumstantial, see *infra* §33.2.2.2.

32.3 Used in place of a relative clause

Relative clauses incorporating a participle, a relative form, *nty* or (*i*).*wn*.(*f*) require a defined antecedent. When the antecedent is undefined, Egyptian replaces the relative clause with an adverbial clause.

Thus, to say ‘a man who speaks,’ one writes **(wʿ) rmʿ iw.f hr dd* (*lit.* ‘a man, when he speaks’) and not **(wʿ) rmʿ nty hr dd*.

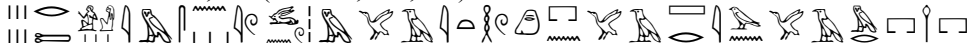
15. Doomed Prince, 4, 7-8 (= *LES*, 2, 2-3).



iw.f hr gmḥ wʿ n tsm iw.f m-sʒ wʿ n s ʿʒ iw.f hr šm hr tʒ mit

‘He glimpsed a dog that followed (*lit.* ‘was behind’) an older man who walked on the road.’

16. P. Leiden I 368, 8-9 (= *KRI* II, 895, 8-9).



6 rmʿ im.sn iw wn.w m pʒ ith n pʒ šri n pʒ mr pr-hd

‘Six of them (*lit.* ‘individuals among them’) who had been in the prison of the son of the overseer of the treasury.’

17. P. BM 10403, 3, 14-15 (= *KRI* VI, 832, 5-6).



hr mn rmʿ iw iw.f (r) sʿhʿ.[ʔ]

‘And there is no one who will accuse me.’

18. P. Berlin 10494, v^o 2-3 (= *LRL*, 24, 4-5).



hr m dy wʒwʒ wʿ ʿdd ʿʒ iw iw.k (r) dit iy.f r ḥms dy

‘And do not give (time) to protest against (*lit.* ‘and do nothing but whisper’) an older teenager that you will cause to come to dwell here.’

In the following table are listed the adverbial clauses that replace relative clauses when the antecedent is undefined. Compare these with the table of true relative clauses in §31.

²⁵³ Another example with the participle *ir*: P. Abbott, 7, 10-12 (= *KRI* VI, 480, 15-481, 2).

Circumstantial clauses that substitute relative clauses (undefined antecedent)

<p><i>Present</i></p>	<p>(w^c) <i>A ... iw.f hr w3h.(k)</i> who places (you)</p> <p>(w^c) <i>A ... iw bn sw hr w3h.(k)</i> who does not place (you)</p>
<p><i>Imperfect</i></p>	<p>(w^c) <i>A ... iw wn.f hr w3h.(k)</i> who placed (you)</p>
<p><i>Past</i></p>	<p>(w^c) <i>A ... iw w3h.f (tw)</i> who placed (you) who has placed (you)</p> <p>(w^c) <i>A ... iw bwpwy.f w3h.(k)</i> who did not place (you) who has not placed (you)</p>
<p><i>Future</i></p>	<p>(w^c) <i>A ... iw iw.f r w3h.(k)</i> who will place (you)</p> <p>(w^c) <i>A ... iw bn iw.f r w3h.(k)</i> who will not place (you)</p>
<p><i>Passive</i></p>	<p>(w^c) <i>A ... iw.f w3h.Ø</i> who has been placed</p>

32.4 Used in place of a complement clause

In Late Egyptian, the construction of a complement clause with a non-independent prospective *sdm.f* is reserved to the verb *rdi*. Other ‘operator’ verbs, for example *gmi* (see Excursus below), use various constructions, including the adverbial clause in lieu of a complement clause.

19. P. Turin 1887, 1, 13 (= *RAD*, 75, 12).

iw.tw (hr) smtr.f iw.tw (hr) gm iw dd.f se n(=m) m3^ct

‘He was questioned and it was found that he had said it indeed.’

20. P. Turin 1972, 4-6 (= *LRL*, 7, 11-13).



y3 i.iri.i gm iw di.f iw wꜥ tsm r t3.i iw.w (hr) gm.i n(=m) mtrt n db3

‘For it is only when they met me in the vicinity of Edfu, that I realised that he had sent a boat to take me.’ The first adverbial clause plays the role of a complement clause, while the second is focalised by a second tense.

32.5 Excursus: the construction of verbs called ‘operators’²⁵⁴

These are the verbs that, in modern languages, admit as direct pronominal object a sentence subject + predicate (for example ‘I find the sweetened apple’). In Late Egyptian the main ones among them are:

- *m3* ‘learn (that), understand (that),’
- *sdm* ‘find out (that),’
- *rh* ‘know (that),’
- *ptr* ‘see (that),’
- and especially *gmi* ‘find (that),’ but often ‘realise (that).’

These verbs cannot be followed by a non-independent prospective, reserved to *rđi*, and are therefore, constructed in four different ways. Here are the possible syntagma that can be used to write in Late Egyptian the sentence:

‘I found (out) that he was dead’

32.5.1 Verb + direct object pronoun + pseudo-verbal predicate²⁵⁵

gm.i se mwt.Ø lit. ‘I found him being dead’

In this construction, called ‘embedded,’ *se* is both the direct pronominal object of *gm.i* and the subject of the pseudo-participle *mwt* (see *supra* §14.3.2).

21. P. Leopold-Amherst, 2, 9-10 (= *KRI* VI, 484, 5-6).



iw.n (hr) gm p3y ntr sdr m ph t3y.f st-qrs

‘We found this god lying (*lit.* ‘being stretched out’) at the back of his grave.’ In this example, *p3y ntr* is both direct object of *gmi* and subject of *sdr*.

32.5.2 Verb + direct object pronoun + adverbial clause

gm.i se iw.f mwt.Ø lit. ‘I found him when he was dead’

²⁵⁴ See Vernus, *Or*, 50 (1981), p. 432-433 and n. 10.

²⁵⁵ Pseudo-participle or preposition + infinitive.

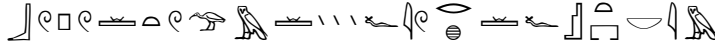
22. P. Leopold-Amherst, 2, 5-6 (= *KRI* VI, 483, 13-484, 1).



iw.n (hr) gm p3 mr n nsw S iw bn se mi-qd n3 mrw miḥṣyt n n3 srw nty tw.n (hr) šm r t3wt im.w m-dwn sp-sn iwn3

‘We found that the pyramid of King S was not at all like the pyramids and tombs of the nobles in which we went to plunder very often.’

23. P. Abbott, 5, 5-6 (= *KRI* VI, 475, 4-5) (fig. p. 216).



bwpw.tw gm.tw.f iw rh.f st nb im

‘It was not found that he had known of any tomb there.’²⁵⁶

32.5.3 Verb + adverbial clause (without direct object pronoun)

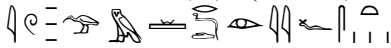
gm.i iw.f mwt.Ø lit. ‘I found (out) when he was dead’

This is the construction studied *supra* §32.4.

32.5.4 Verb + *r-dd* + independent form²⁵⁷ (very frequent)

gm.i r-dd sw mwt.Ø lit. ‘I found (out): “he is dead”’

24. P. Turin 1875, 4, 2 (= *KRI* V, 352, 7-8).



iw.w hr gm r-dd try.f se

‘They found out that he had committed them (= major crimes).’

32.6 Remarks

Adverbial clauses can also be found in nominal sentences with adjectival predicate, see *infra* §40.5.

²⁵⁶ See *supra* §15.2.2, example 17.

²⁵⁷ See Sweeney, *Crossroads* I, 1986, p. 337-373.

33. Adverbial clauses introduced by *īr*

33.1 The particle *īr*

The fundamental property of the particle *īr* is to point out that an element, nominal or adverbial, of a predicative plain sentence, has been fronted. This results in two-member constructions of the type:

***īr* + fronted element / second member**

If the preposed element is nominal, one is dealing with a **thematization** or **topicalisation** (see §12.4.2 and below Excursus A).

***īr* + noun (or equivalent) / independent form (verbal or not)**

marked theme = topic / rheme = comment

The thematised element is often resumed by a pronominal form in the second member. The sentence is usually translated: ‘As for S ...’

If the element is adverbial, one has:

***īr* + circonstant (= adverbial element) / non-subordinate verbal form**

The circonstant can be:

- a. an **adverb** (see below Excursus B);
- b. a **prepositional phrase** (see below Excursus C);
- c. a **verbal form** with circumstantial function.

- These three categories can be combined in the order a, b, c.

Adverbial clauses introduced by *īr* belong to case ‘c.’ The particle is then shown in the protasis of correlative systems²⁵⁸ of the type:

***īr* + verbal form independent or not / non-subordinate verbal form**

protasis / apodosis

The resulting systems can either be found in initial position, or be coordinated to the foregoing by means of the particle *īr*.

33.2 Correlative systems introduced by *īr*

33.2.1 The protasis incorporates *īr* + independent verbal form

The forms attested are the first present, the perfective and prospective *sdm.f*, the third future, and the existential sentences.

Placed before these verbal forms, the particle *īr* converts them in non-independent forms

²⁵⁸ Or even hypotactical. In these systems, the adverbial clause precedes the main one, see *supra* §32.2.2.

with adverbial function (or indicates that these forms have adverbial function).

33.2.1.1 The protasis incorporates *ir* + First Present

Examples are almost always found in narrative contexts.²⁵⁹ In this case, the first present, introduced by *ir*, describes a process or a state more or less concomitant to the process of the apodosis, where the sequential is always present. The system has, in itself, no temporal nuance, it is the narrative context that confers it a past temporal value. In general, it is translated by ‘when’ or ‘while.’

These systems are never found in an initial position – where other expressions, such as *ir m-dr sdm.f* ..., *ir ink* ..., or the narrative infinitive, are used – but always at the beginning of a non-initial paragraph, systematically coordinated to the foregoing by the particle *hr*. This tends to indicate that for the Egyptians the narrative consisted of a unit without independent parts.

hr ir + first present / sequential

33.2.1.1.1 The predicate of the First Present is a prepositional phrase (rare)

1. P. Orbiney, 16, 8 (= *LES*, 26, 10-11).



hr ir se hr rmn (n) nz n rmt / iw.f hr ktk m nhbt.f

‘But, while it was on the shoulders of the people, it moved its neck.’

33.2.1.1.2 The predicate of the First Present is (*hr*) + infinitive (frequent)

2. O. Cairo 25725, 1-3 (= *KRI* IV, 417, 6-8): deposition before the court.

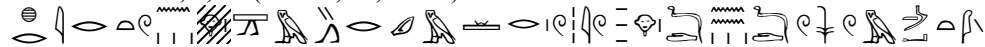


ir ink di.i w n dziw n tzy.i sri(t) iw.s gb.[ti] hr ir st hr snb / iw.i hr h3b n.s hr <dd> imi tw.f iw.s hr tm di.tw.f

‘As for me, I gave a skirt to my daughter while she was ill, and, when she was recovering, I wrote to her saying: “So return it!” She did not return it.’²⁶⁰

This example illustrates the use of the system in non-initial paragraphs, and also shows that it can serve as support to other sequentials (here a negative sequential).

3. P. Turin 1880, 2, 17 (= *RAD*, 55, 13-14).



hr ir tw.n hr sm r sdm r(3).w / iw.w hr dd n.n dd.O se m m3't

‘And when we went to hear their deposition, they said to us: “that has been, indeed, said”’ (*lit.* ‘it was said in truth’).²⁶¹

²⁵⁹ Very rare exception is, for example, P. Anastasi VI, 38 (= *LEM*, 75, 8-9).

²⁶⁰ See *supra* §25.2.2, example 3.

²⁶¹ See *supra* §15.2.1, example 12.

33.2.1.1.3 The predicate of the First Present is *m* + infinitive

This usage is limited to verbs of motion and indicates concomitance.

4. P. Mallet, VI, 6 (= *KRI* VI, 68, 1-2).

hr ir tw.i m hnt / *iw.i (hr) sdm r-dd tw.k hd.tw*

‘And while I was travelling south, I learned that you had arrived in the north.’

33.2.1.1.4 The predicate of the First Present is a stative

This usage seems limited to the semi-auxiliaries *hpr*, *ḥꜥ*, *ḥmsi*.

5. P. BM 10053, v° 2, 16 (= *KRI* VI, 758, 2-3).

hr ir tw.n ḥꜥ.ti (hr) pš.w / *iw šmsw nht-imm-w3st^{sic} {n} (hr) iy iw.f (hr) itz hmt dbn 7*

‘However, while we were sharing them, the servant Nakhtamunwaset came; he took seven copper debens.’

33.2.1.2 The protasis incorporates *ir* + *sdm.f*

In these instances it will be necessary to distinguish carefully between *ir* + perfective *sdm.f* and *ir* + prospective *sdm.f*.

33.2.1.2.1 *ir* + perfective *sdm.f* (rare)

In a narrative context this syntagma (either active or passive) constitutes a temporal protasis where the *sdm.f* describes a process anterior to that of the apodosis, which always contains a sequential.

ir + perfective *sdm.f* / sequential

6. P. Turin 1880, 3, 9-11 (= *RAD*, 56, 11-14).

‘Saying by the foreman Khonsu to the crew...“Take the rations and go down to the quay...”’

hr ir qn sš imm-nht dit n.sn diw / *iw.w (hr) dit.w r mryt r-mitt-n p3 dd.f n.sn - hr ir sn.w wꜥt inbt* / *iw sš imm-nht (hr) šm iw.f (hr) dd n.sn m ir sn r mryt*

and, after the scribe Amennakht had finished distributing the rations to them, they set off (en route) to the quay in accordance with what he (= Khonsu) had told them, but when they passed a guard post, the scribe Amennakht went to say to them: “do not continue (*lit.* ‘do not go towards’) to the quay.”’

33.2.1.2.2 *ir* + prospective *sḏm.f* (frequent)

In a non-narrative context this syntagma represents a protasis, usually a conditional one, expressing a process that has not yet occurred. In the apodosis, it is possible to find various independent forms (and, therefore, never the sequential). Depending on the probability of realisation of the process described in the protasis, the sentence is translated as ‘if + present’ or ‘when + future.’

ir + prospective *sḏm.f* / independent form

7. O. Gardiner 310, 2-5 (= *KRI* III, 797, 11-12).

 *ir*

ptr.ī m-ḏd di.k ḥpr (i).wn m-dī.ī / iw.ī r irt n.k w^c mn n srmt qdy

‘If I see that you have made (re)appear what I owned (= ‘that you make me find again my property’), I will allocate for you a measure of Cilicia *sermet*.’²⁶²

8. P. Orbiney, 10, 3 (= *LES*, 19, 16-20, 1).²⁶³



hr ir gm se ky / iw.ī (r) ḥz m-dī.f

‘But if someone else finds it, I will fight with him.’

33.2.1.3 The protasis incorporates a Third Future (very rare examples)

9. P. Cairo 58059, 5-6 (= *KRI* III, 252, 6-7).

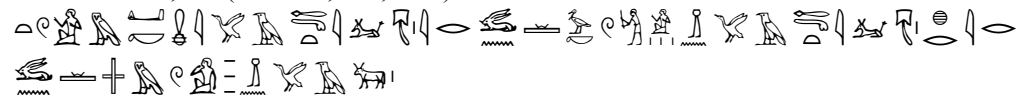


ir wn iw.k r irt [t3////] i.ḏd.k / imi in.tw.s di.ī it3.tw.s n.f

‘In the event that you would have done the //// of which you spoke, have it sent so that I have it taken to him ...’ Note the sequence *wn iw* characteristic of the third future in the protasis.

33.2.1.4 The protasis incorporates an existential sentence

10. O. DM 303, 3-4 (= *KRI* III, 534, 9-11).



tw.ī m.dī.k mi p3 ʿ3 ir wn b3k / in p3 ʿ3 hr ir wn wnm / in p3 ih

‘I am for you like the donkey: if there is work, one fetches the donkey (= me), but if there is food, one fetches the ox (= another)!’

33.2.2 The protasis incorporates *ir* + non-independent verbal form

33.2.2.1 The protasis incorporates a sequential²⁶⁴ (examples are very rare and late)

²⁶² Beverage made from dates, see Valbelle, *Ouvriers*, p. 280.

²⁶³ Another example: Hittite Treaty, 16-17 (= *KRI* II, 228, 7-8).

11. P. Strasburg 39, v° 3-6 (= Allam, *HOP*, pl. 105): 21st dynasty.



ir iw.k (hr) tm gm.tw.f / iw.k (r) ptr n3 rmj nty iri nh.f (r) dd n.k imi n.w nh mtw.k t3y.tw.w r p3 wb3 (n) p3y.w nr

‘If you do not find it, you will see (= ‘you will go and see’) the people about which Ankhef will say to you: “Impose an oath on them” and you will bring them to the court of their god.’”

33.2.2.2 The protasis incorporates a circumstantial First Present (examples are very rare)

12. O. Vienna 9, v° 1-2 (= *KRI* v, 563, 4-5).



hr ir iw bn se hr dl.tw.f n.k / iw.k hr(=r) in n.i p3y.f hnk

‘And if he does not give it (= the goat) to you, you will bring²⁶⁵ me its coat.²⁶⁶ The sequence *iw bn se* is characteristic of a negative circumstantial first present.

13. P. BN 198, II, v° 6-7 (= *LRL*, 68, 9-10).

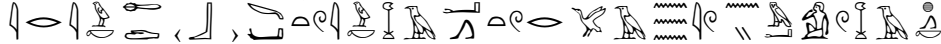


ir iw.k m t3ty / bn iw.i (r) h3y r n3y.k sktyw

‘If you were the vizier, I would not venture (lit. ‘would not go down’) in your boats!’²⁶⁷

The presence of the first present in the protasis is very probable, because the predicate is a prepositional phrase built with *m*. The form in the apodosis is clearly a third future, unmistakable because in the negative form.

14. P. BM 10052, 3, 16-17 (= *KRI* vi, 774, 7-8).



ir iw.k hdb.tw iw.k h3r.tw r p3 mw / iw nim (r) wh3.k

‘If you are killed and thrown in the water, who will seek you? (= ‘will care about you’).’

The double protasis contains two instances of the first present with a pseudo-participle²⁶⁸ as predicate, while the apodosis contains a third future.²⁶⁹

33.2.2.3 The protasis incorporates *m-dr sdm.f* or *m-ht sdm.f*

In both cases, the construction preposition/adverb + prospective *sdm.f*, produces, by grammaticalisation, a ‘subordinate conjunctive,²⁷⁰ – a non-independent form also found in

²⁶⁴ Another example: P. Boulaq 6, VI, 6 (21st dynasty). In reality, this construction is a precursor of the demotic ‘conditional’ *iw.f (tm) sdm*, see Johnson, *The Demotic Verbal System*, p. 233-265, especially p. 235, n. 23.

²⁶⁵ For the interpretation as a third future, see example 13 below.

²⁶⁶ Another possible translation: ‘And if he does not sell it to you, you will buy me its coat.’

²⁶⁷ Cf. the Yiddish proverb quoted by F. Chandernagor, *L’archange de Vienne*, p. 78: ‘If his word were a bridge, I would be afraid to go over.’

²⁶⁸ The probability of this being a third future having a pseudo-participle as predicate – ‘analogical’ construction (see *supra* §19.4) – is very low.

²⁶⁹ See the preceding example in the negative form. However, *iri nim r sdm* is also attested in the third future (P. Turin 2021, 3, 10).

²⁷⁰ See Černý-Groll, *LEG*, §32 and §35, p. 410 and 418.

unmarked position, that is, after the main clause,²⁷¹ but obviously without *ir*. Examples are found only in narrative contexts.

Example with *m-dr sdm.f*:

15. P. BM 10052, 12, 2-5 (= *KRI* VI, 793, 4-8).²⁷²

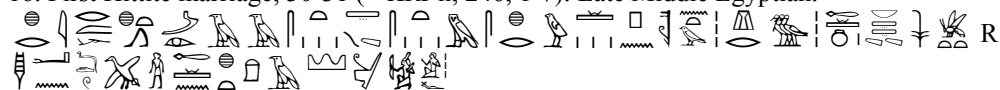


dd.f ir m-dr hdb iw.f-n-inn n3 snw n n3y.i hryw / iw.i (hr) h3 r p3 imw irm.f iw.i (hr) sm r A hr ir se (hr) ph r dmi B / iw.w (hr) dd n.f n3y.k rmt (hr) t3y inntt iw.f (hr) dd gr m ir dd.tw.f
 ‘He said: “After Iuefenamun had killed the brothers of my superiors, I went into the boat with him and went to A, and, when he reached the town of B, he was told (*lit.* ‘they said to him’): “Your men plunder the West!” He replied: “Shut up, do not say it!”’

In this example, an initial paragraph – consisting of a protasis with *m-dr* + *sdm.f* and its apodosis – is followed by a second paragraph – consisting of a protasis with *ir* + first present and its apodosis – with the two paragraphs linked together by the particle *hr* (see *supra* §33.2.1.1.2).

Example with *m-ht sdm.f*:

16. First Hittite marriage, 30-31 (= *KRI* II, 246, 1-7): Late Middle Egyptian.²⁷³



hr ir m-ht m33.se t3.se m shr pn qsn hr b3w 3 nw nb t3wy nsw bit R / 3h.c.n dd p3 wr 3 n ht3 n m3.c.f

‘But, when they saw their country in that pitiful state, (bowing) to the great power of the lord of the Two Lands, the King of Upper and Lower Egypt R(amses II), the great Chief of Hatti said to his army ...’

33.2.2.4 Remarks

There is a case where the construction preposition/adverb + independent verbal form is not grammaticalised: it is the syntagma *m-ht* + first present (limited to nominal subject + pseudo-participle, and confined to literary texts). This must be analysed as two units: adverb + independent form (and not a ‘subordinate conjunctive’). It is found only after *ir*.

17. Doomed Prince, 4, 6-7 (= *LES*, 2, 1-2).



hr ir m-ht / p3 hrd 3y / iw.f hr ts r t3y.f tp-hwt

‘And later, the child having grown up, he went up to his terrace.’

²⁷¹ See *supra* §26.3. Examples of this usage after the main clause: with *m-dr* see P. Turin 1880, 2, 18-9, cited in §26.3, example 4; with *m-ht* see P. Abbott, 4, 13 (= *KRI* VI, 474, 3).

²⁷² Another example: Pentawer poem 205-207 (= *KRI* II, 66, 1-15).

²⁷³ See Winand, *o.l.*, §22, p. 13.

18. P. Orbiney, 13, 6-7 (= *LES*, 23, 6-7).



hr ir m-ht / t3 hd.Ø / sn-nw n hrw hprw / wn.in.f hr hpr hr sm hr p3 ʕ

‘And then, the earth having lit up, a second day having arrived, he began to walk under the pine.’

33.2.3 The protasis incorporates the ambiguous syntagma *iw.f* (?) *sdm* (very frequent)

19. P. Geneva D 187, v° 1-4 (= *LRL*, 42, 2-6).



ir iw.i (?) *gm r-dd m3c.tw p3y rmt ist [hr n3 ?] qnqn i.iri.f p3y.i smsw / iw.i (r) dit n.f [////]*

hr.w – hr ir iw.i (?) *m r-dd m3c.tw p3y.i [šmsw iw iri.f?] qnqn.f m hwrʕ / iw.i (r) dit ptr.k p3 nty iw.i (r) [ir.tw.f n.f]*

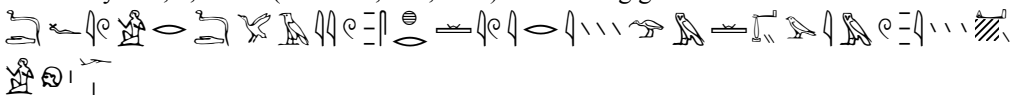
‘If I find out that this (tomb) worker was right [about the] beatings that he inflicted to my servant, I will give him (= the servant) [others] in addition(?). – But, if I find out that my [servant] was right [when he (= the worker)] violently beat him,²⁷⁴ I will let you see what I am going do to him (= the worker)!’

It is difficult to identify the *iw.f*(?) *sdm* form because:

- it can be the third future, see above §33.2.1.3,
- the sequential, see above §33.2.2.1,
- or the circumstantial first present, see above §33.2.2.2.

Remark. It is possible to find examples where such a system is preceded by the circumstantial *iw*:

20. P. Mayer A, 8, 13-14 (= *KRI* VI, 818, 9-10): concerning gold and silver debens.



dd.f iw.i r dd p3y.w shr iw ir iw.tw (?) *gm ʕd3 im.w iw.tw (r) dit.i tp ht*

‘He said: “I will state their source²⁷⁵ because, if it is found that it is irregular,²⁷⁶ I will be put on the stake.”’

33.3 Conclusion

The particle *ir* allows one to construct (among others) correlative systems containing in the protasis various verbal forms that take on a circumstantial function.

If these forms are not subordinate (independent or sequential forms), *ir* plays both the role of

²⁷⁴ For the reading *hwrʕ*, see Wentz, *LRL*, p. 58, n. g.

²⁷⁵ *Lit.* ‘Their state, their situation.’ The judges think it is ‘dirty money’ deriving from the plunder of graves.

²⁷⁶ *Lit.* ‘If something illegal is found in them.’

subordination converter and of signal of the marked order. Otherwise (circumstantial first present, *m-dr sdm.f...*), *ir* only fulfils the second function.

33.4 Excursus A: thematisations with *ir*

These are constructions that set up in marked theme or topic (see *supra* §12.4.2) any nominal element of an initial plain sentence (verbal or nominal). To do this, the element to be thematised is preposed (or topicalised) and the transposition is indicated by the particle *ir*. The result is a two-member construction:

***ir* + preposed element (= topic) / rheme (or comment)**

The element thus thematised is frequently resumed in pronominal form in the comment.

When the element thematised is pronominal, the tonic independent pronoun is used, see *supra* §7.4.2 and below example 22.

33.4.1 Thematisation of the subject

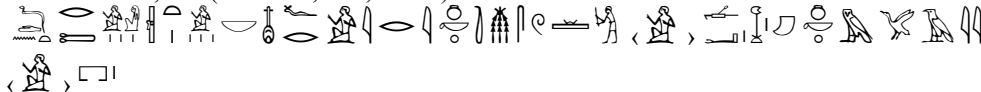
21. O. Gardiner 55, v° 4 (= *HO*, pl. 66, 2).²⁷⁷



hr ir 3ht nb sp-sn nty m p3y. i pr / iw.w n t3y. i hmt hn n3y.s hrdw

‘And, as for all possessions, without exception, that are in my house, they will be for my wife and her children.’

22. O. Nash 1, 2-3 (= *KRI* IV, 315, 10-11).



ddt.n rm i st nb-nfr ir ink / tms. i w hl ink m p3y. i pr

‘What the worker Nebnefer said: “As for me, (I) buried one of my picks in my house ...”’

33.4.1 Thematisation of the direct object pronoun

23. P. Turin 1875, 2, 5 (= *KRI* V, 350, 16-351, 1).



ir n3 mdwt i. dd n3 rm i / bw rh. i se

‘As for the words that people have said, I do not know them.’

24. P. BM 10326, v° 21 (= *LRL*, 20, 14-15).



hr ir p3 ht i. di. k m-hnw st / di. i se im n (r) dit in. tw. f. n. k n

‘And, as for the stick that you had placed inside a letter, I have put it back there again so that it is returned to you.’

²⁷⁷ Another example (damaged): Mès, N 31-32 (= *KRI* III, 430, 15-16).

33.4.3 Thematisation of a noun (or equivalent) object of a preposition

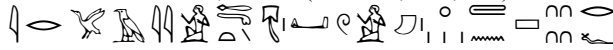
25. P. Ashmolean Museum 1945.95 (Naunakht I), 2, 7 (= *KRI* VI, 238, 2).



ir p3 nty bwpw.f dit n.i / bn iw.i r dit n.f m 3ht.tw.i

‘As for the one who has given nothing (*lit.* ‘not’) to me, I will not bequeath to him (*lit.* ‘will not give’) any of my property.’

26 O. Berlin P 1121, v° 1-2 (= *KRI* v, 525, 1-2).

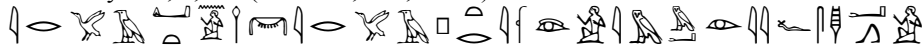


ir p3y.i 3 / di.i hmt dbn 40 r.f

‘As for my donkey, I paid 40 debens for it’ (*lit.* ‘I gave 40 debens for it’).

33.4.4 Thematisation of the subject of a complement clause

27. P. Mayer A, 9, 6-7 (= *KRI* VI, 820, 11-12).



ir p3 dit n.i hq ir p3 ptr (w)i / imi iry.f s'hc.i

‘As for the one who has given me silver, or as for the one who has seen me, cause (then) that he accuses me!’ Note the double thematisation and the periphrasis of the quadrilateral verb of the complement clause.

Remark. It is possible to find, although less frequently, cases of thematisation through fronting without *ir*, especially after *mk*, *ptr*, or *hr*.

33.5 Excursus B: *ir* + adverb / verbal form

Adverbs thus constructed are often:

hr-s3

(literary and daily life texts)

28. P. Leiden I 350, v° col. III, 1, 13 (= *KRI* II, 810, 3): logbook.



h3c s3 pth-ms smsw pth-m-nw b3ki hr ir hr-s3 / iw.tw hr h3c s3 hr-tl hr tr n mtrt

‘Release of the scribe Ptahmes, (along with) the servants Ptahmenu and Baki, and then the scribe Hortel was released at midday.’

m-ht

(only literary texts, and always with a prepositional phrase or a verbal form, see above §33.2.2.4)

29. P. Orbiney, 4, 3-4 (= *LES*, 13, 5-6).



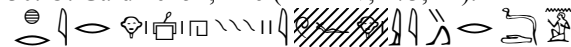
hr ir m-ht / hr tr n rwh3 / wn.in p3y.f sn 3 (hr) whc r p3y.f pr

‘And later, in the evening, his elder brother returned home’ (*lit.* ‘towards his house’).

33.6 Excursus C: *hr* + prepositional phrase / verbal form

The most commonly used prepositions in this case are: *hr-s3*, *hr*, *m*.

30. O. Gardiner 54, r° 6 (= *KRI* v, 473, 12).



hr ir hr-s3 hrw 2 / iw.f hr iy r dd n.i

‘And, two days later, he came to say to me ...’

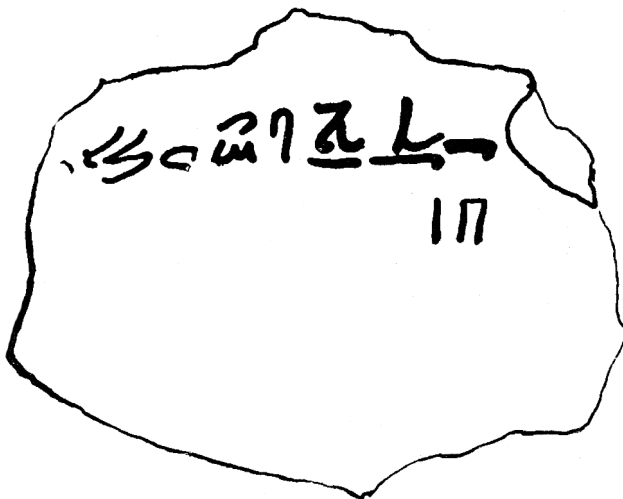
31. P. Orbiney, 2, 2 (= *LES*, 11, 1-2).



hr ir hr tr n sk3 / iw p3y.f sn 3 hr dd n.f

‘And, at the time of ploughing, his elder brother said to him ...’

Remark. In example 31, the prepositional phrase *hr tr n sk3* is preposed, while in example 28 *hr tr n mtrt* is in its normal position at the end of the sentence. Thus, fronting (marked order) permits to highlight the adverbial, or to give it a slight emphasis, which is intermediate between the plain sentence and the second tense.²⁷⁸



O. DM 575 (cf. p. 219)

²⁷⁸ In a narrative context, the fronting of the adverbial is practically the only way to emphasise it, the second tense being used only in a non-narrative context, but see Satzinger, *NÄS*, §2.7.1.3, p. 241-242: “Narrativierung der ‘emphatischen’ Form.”

34. Adverbial clauses introduced by *wnn*

34.1 Introduction²⁷⁹

Adverbial clauses introduced by *wnn* are constructed from the first present (most often with *ḥr* + infinitive as predicate²⁸⁰). The auxiliary *wnn*, here as *mrr.f*, of which it is the only vestige in Late Egyptian, serves to nominalise the verbal phrase formed by the first present. This results in:

*wnn.f*²⁸¹ *ḥr sdm* or *wnn A ḥr sdm*

This noun phrase then assumes adverbial function in the protasis of a correlative system which apodosis almost always contains a sequential (rarely an imperative²⁸² or a prospective²⁸³). In general, therefore, one has:

protasis / apodosis

wnn.f ḥr sdm / *iw.f ḥr (tm) sdm*

nominalised first present / sequential

Remarks

1. The system consists of two non-independent forms leaning on one another. They are independent sentences of higher order on which other non-independent forms, particularly the conjunctive, can lean.

2. The system is devoid of any temporality: it merely indicates that each realisation of the process of the protasis **automatically** brings about, and only once (hence the use of the sequential), the completion of the process of the apodosis:

A (protasis) ► B (apodosis)

In the much more frequent case where the process of the protasis is not a perfective (information provided by the co(n)text), the sentence is translated by a conditional system (**if**), or a temporal one (**when, as soon as**), depending on the **probability** of realisation of this process.

3. The system originated with the *Wechselsatz*:

A ◄► B *wnn pt* / *wnn.t r.t*²⁸⁴

and, by deterioration of the second member, one gets to the system studied:

²⁷⁹ See Satzinger, *NĀS*, §1.4.1.1, p. 84-106; Vernus, *GM* 43 (1981), 77-83; *l'Égyptologie en 1979*, I, 1982, p. 86, n. g; *RdE* 34 (1982-1983), 119, (c); *Revue historique de droit français et étranger*, vol. 61, 1983, 75; Junge, *JEA* 72 (1986), 122-124.

²⁸⁰ Very rarely a pseudo-participle or a prepositional phrase, see Satzinger, *o.c.*, §1.4.1.1.6, p. 94.

²⁸¹ Rare variants: *wnn iw.f ḥr sdm*, for example Wenamun, 2, 50-51 (= *LES*, 72, 4-5).

²⁸² Satzinger, *o.c.*, §1.4.1.1.5, p. 93.

²⁸³ Frandsen, *LEVS*, §98, example 6 (= O. Petrie 61, 6).

²⁸⁴ 'As heaven exists, so you exist near me,' Urk. IV, 348, 9.

A ► B, where B is an independent verbal form.

4. The system can be coordinated with the foregoing by the particle *hr*.²⁸⁵

34.2 Examples²⁸⁶

The syntagma used in the first two examples is very frequent in letters.

1. P. BM 10412, 8-9 (= *LRL*, 55, 12-13).



*wnn t3y.(i) š'ct (hr) spr r.ḫ*²⁸⁷ / *iw.ḫ*²⁸² (*hr*) *wḏ sbk-s'nh* r p3 nty p3 ḥm-ntr n mnṯw im mtw.f šsp n.f t3y st3t 3ḥt

‘As soon as my letter will reach you, you will send Sobeksankh to (*lit.* ‘to the place where is’) the priest of Montu, and he will receive from him this aroura of land.’

2. P. Berlin P 8523, 11-16 (= Allam, *HOP*, pl. 76).



wnn t3y.(i) š'ct (hr) spr r.k / *iw.k (hr) dīt ḥr.k* n t3(y) 3ḥt mtw.k tm nni n.s mtw.k t3y p3y.s qm3 mtw.k sk3.s

‘As soon as my letter will reach you, you will take care of this field and you will not neglect²⁸⁸ it, and you will pull off its reeds and you will plough it.’

3. P. BN 196, II, 7-9 (= *LRL*, 21, 11-13): letter.





hr wnn sš p(3)-n-t3-ḥwt-nḥt (hr) iy n.t(n) r-dd imi se ḥri dd b3k.f / *iw.tn (hr) tm dīt.f* n.f r-dd <dd> p3 mr mš'c imi b3k.f n3 niwy mtw.tn dīt n.f ḥmt r dīt b3k.f n3 niwy

‘And if the scribe Pentahutnakht comes to tell you (*lit.* ‘comes to you saying’): “Give it, (to) Hori who has been assigned to work!”²⁸⁹ you will not give it to him, explaining (*lit.* ‘saying’): “The general has said:²⁹⁰ ‘Have him forge the spears.’ And you will give him (= to Hori) some copper to let him forge the spears.” Note the negative sequential in the apodosis of this last example.

²⁸⁵ Note the article by Baer, *JEA* 51 (1965), 137-143, now outdated.

²⁸⁶ The system is normally used in a discourse, in non-narrative contexts. Its use to report past events is an effect of style, for example: P. Salt 124, 2, 3-4; v° 1, 9; v° 1, 15.

²⁸⁷ The text shows  instead of , but the context clearly indicates that this is a woman and that the scribe omitted the dot that, in hieratic, characterises the sign for the seated woman.

²⁸⁸ *Lit.* ‘And you will not be negligent towards it.’

²⁸⁹ *Lit.* ‘Who has been caused that he works.’

²⁹⁰ Haplography.

34.3 Remark: another use of *wnn*

Although much more rarely, the ‘nominalisation’ converter *wnn* is attested in sentences where it transforms a verbal phrase A into a nominal sentence of the type B Ø, where B = *wnn* A (see *infra* §39.2.2.1).

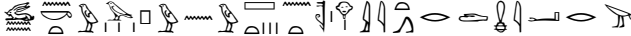
4. Kuban Stela, 11 (= *KRI* II, 355, 7).²⁹¹



wnn bw in.tw nbw hr h3st tn m-^c ng3w mw

‘The fact is that gold was never brought back from this country due to lack of water.’

• In Middle Egyptian the construction is obviously *wnn A pw*, for example, P. Smith 8, 15-16:





‘It is that some bone splinters are coming into contact with the swab.’

²⁹¹ Other examples: P. Anastasi IV, 8, 2-1 (= *LEM*, 42, 14-16), cited *supra* §18.2, example 4; P. Anastasi IV, 12, 6 and 9 (= *LEM*, 48, 5-6 and 10), P. DM VI, 5 (= *KRI* VI, 267,1); P. Turin 1887 v° 1, 11 (= *RAD* 79, 10).

35. Adverbial clauses introduced by *inn*

35.1 Introduction²⁹²

Placed before an independent form (verbal or otherwise), the particle  *inn* 'if' converts it into an adverbial clause, always expressing a true condition.

▪ **Note:** the spelling  may also be that of the first person plural independent pronoun *inn* 'we' (see *supra* §7.4.1); that of *i.n.n* 'so we said' (see *supra* §12.3.2.2); that of the interrogative *in* (see *supra* §11.2.1, *infra* §43 and example 5 below), or that of the morpheme meaning 'except'.²⁹³

Independent forms that can be converted by *inn* are:

- the first present (example 2);
- the perfective *sḏm.f*;
- the *bwpwy.f sḏm* form (example 3);
- the third future (examples 4, 5);
- the affirmative (example 1) or negative (examples 2, 5) existential sentence;
- the second tenses;
- the cleft sentences (example 5).

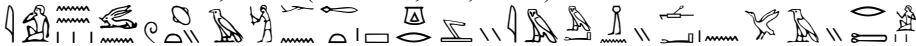
35.2 Usage

The conditionals introduced by *inn* always constitute the protasis of correlative systems whose apodosis contains a variety of independent forms, among which are:


- the third future (examples 3, 4, 5);
- the imperative (example 1, 2, 5);
- the prospective *sḏm.f*;
- the cleft sentences.

These conditionals can be found in an initial position, or after particles, such as *hr* or *ptr*. They are only found in the discourse, in a non-narrative context.

1. O. Brussels E 305, v^o 2-4 (= *KRI* VII, 338, 14-15).


inn wn wtyw n ʿst grg.tw / imi in.tw wʿ n pzy rmt
 'If there are hard stone sarcophagi that are ready, have one delivered to this man.'

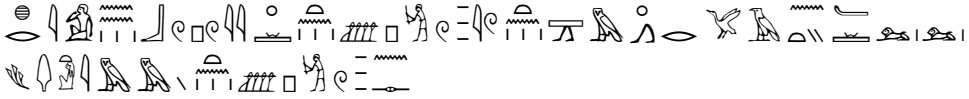
2. O. Berlin P 12630, v^o 1-2 (= *KRI* V, 595, 4-6).


inn tw.ḏ hr dīt p3 ih / imi in.tw.f – hr inn mn ih / imi in.tw p3 ḥʿti ḥnʿ p3 wt
 'If you give the bull, have it brought; but if there is no bull, have the bed and the coffin brought back.'

²⁹² See Černý, *JEA* 27 (1941), 108-112, and *ZĀS* 90 (1963), 13-16; Satzinger, *NĀS*, §1.4.2.1, p. 106-108; Green, *Or* 49 (1980), 1-29; Depuydt, *JEA* 77 (1991), 69-78.

²⁹³ See the excellent article by Černý, *loc. cit.*

3. P. BM 10100, 14-15 (= *LRL*, 50, 16-51, 2): concerning female servants.



hr inn bwpwy.tn šsp.w / iw.tn (r) šm r p3 nty hr rt im mtw.tn šsp.w n.s

‘And if you have not received them, you will go find Hereret and you will receive them from her.’

Example after thematisation:

4. P. Mayer B, 4-5 (= *KRI* VI, 515, 10-11).



ir n3 ḥd i.gm.k inn bn iw.k (r) dit n.i im.w / iw.i (r) šm r ḏd.tw.f n p3 ḥ3ty-^c


‘As for the silver (objects) that you found, if you do not give me some of them, I will go to tell it to the Major!’

5. P. Louvre E 27151, 7-11 (= *JEA* 64 (1978), pl. 14): concerning a honey jar of poor quality.




iw.i hr dit in.tw.s n.k r rsy inn m ky r(=i).di se n.k / imi ptr.f se mtw.k ptr in iw.k r gm w^c(t) nfr(t) mtw.k dit in.tw.s n.i hr di p3-r^c snb.k hr inn mn Ø²⁹⁴ / iw.k hr(=r?) dit in.tw p3 mn n sntr

‘I have had it returned to you to the South. If it is someone else who supplied it to you, let him see it, and see whether you find a good one (*lit.* ‘and see: “will you find a good one?”’) and send it to me, and may Pre grant you good health!²⁹⁵ But if there is not, you will have the pot of incense brought (to me).’

Note that the second  in this example is not the particle studied in this chapter, but a writing of the interrogative morpheme *in* (see §11.2.1 and *infra* §43), that, in some cases, can also be translated as ‘if, whether.’²⁹⁶ Here it introduces an interrogative complement clause, transliterated in roman characters.

²⁹⁴ See *supra* §22.2, example 5.

²⁹⁵ Here the role of the particle *hr* is to allow the passage from the imperative (jussive) to the prospective (optative), and also to place the god and humans on a different level.

²⁹⁶ For example: *I don't know whether it is true.* Cf. French ‘*Si.*’ A similar example showing the current grapheme  of the interrogative *in* is: *mtw.k ptr (i)n sw iw hr ḥ3r* ‘And see whether he has come (back) from Syria,’ P. Bologna 1094, 5, 5-6 (= *LEM*, 5, 7-8).

36. Adverbial clauses introduced by *hn*, *bsi* and *hl* (*hnr*)

36.1 Introduction

Placed in front of various independent forms (verbal or not), these three particles turn them into adverbial clauses expressing a condition that is already known to be unfulfilled:

‘if (but this is not the case) ... (‘Unreal Conditional’²⁹⁷)

36.2 The conditional introduced by *hn*²⁹⁸

These are the more frequent of the three, and are mainly found in school texts. They are constructed from the following independent forms:

- the perfective *sḏm.f* (example 1);
- the *bw sḏm.f* form;
- the first present;
- the existential sentence (example 2);
- the nominal sentence (example 3).

Most often, they constitute the protasis of a correlative system which apodosis contains, almost always, the third future preceded by the past converter: *wn (bn) iw.f r sḏm* (see *supra* §19.2).

1. P. BM 10052, 4, 11-12 (= *KRI* VI, 776, 13-14).


*dd.f b(w)p(w)y.i ptr rmt nb hn ptr.i / wn iw.i (r) dd.tw.f*²⁹⁹

‘He said: “I did not see anyone, if I had seen (someone), I would have said it.”’

2. Wenamun, 2, 29-30 (= *LES*, 69, 15-16).

‘As for what you said: “Former kings had silver and gold brought,”


hn wn <w>-di.w ḥḥ snb / wn bn iw.w (r) dit in.tw n3 ḥtw

if they had had life and health, they would not have caused material goods to be brought!’

²⁹⁷ Also termed ‘clauses of unfulfilled condition.’

²⁹⁸ See Satzinger, *NÄS*, §1.4.2.2, p. 109-114.

²⁹⁹ Note the variant: *hn wn ptr.i / wn iw.i (r) dd.tw.f* (P. BM 10403, 3, 31 = *KRI* VI, 776, 13-14).

3. Wenamun, 1, 18-19 (= *LES*, 62, 13-15).



hn itzy iw ny-se pzy.i t3 p3 h3y r t3y.k br mtw.f t3y pzy.k hd / *wn iw.i (r) db3.f n.k m pzy.i wd3*
 ‘If it were a thief belonging to my country the one who went down into your ship and stole your silver, I would have reimbursed it to you from my treasury ... (but, as for the thief who robbed you, he is yours, he belongs to your ship).’ In this example *hn* precedes a nominal sentence in which the second member is continued by a conjunctive.

36.3 The conditional introduced by *bsi*³⁰⁰

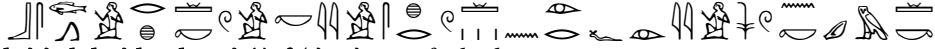
The unreal conditional clauses introduced by *bsi* always convey an optative nuance: ‘Ah, if only (but alas, this is not the case) ...,’ unlike the previous one, which *could*.

When, and this is quite frequent, the independent form following *bsi* is a first present with a pronominal subject, the latter takes the suffixal form and is combined with *bsi* in the same way as with *iw* or *wn*, thus resulting in: *bsi.i*, *bsi.k*, *bsi.f* etc.

Naturally, these conditionals may appear in correlative systems.

4. P. Lansing, 2, 8-9 (= *LEM*, 101, 11-12).

‘And I have beaten you with all kinds of staffs, but you do not listen.



bsi.i rh.kwi ky shr n ir(t).f / *iry.i sw n.f sdm.k*

Ah! If only I knew of another method to apply, I would apply it to you so that you listen!’ The apodosis contains an independent prospective *sdm.f*.

5. P. Leiden I 365, 6-7 (= *KRI* III, 233, 1).

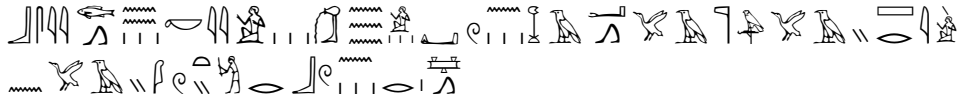
‘And, as for the letter you sent me (asking me) about the three young girls: they are well.



bsi w^c nb mi-qd.w

Ah! If only everyone (*lit.* ‘each’) was like them!’

6. P. Turin 1887, 1, 12-13 (= *RAD*, 75, 10-11).




bsi n.n ky 3 w^cb / *di.n h3^c p3 ntr pzy šri n pzy šwti r-bl*

‘Ah! If only we had three other pure priests, we would ensure that the god cast out the son of this dealer! (*lit.* ‘this son of this dealer’).’

For an example with a nominal sentence, see *infra* §39.3.1, example 42.

³⁰⁰ See Caminos, *LEM*, p. 150; Satzinger, *o.c.*, 1.4.2.3, p. 114-115.

36.4 The conditional introduced by  **hl (hnr)**³⁰¹

They occur only in school or literary texts, and almost always in sentences expressing a wish *hl n.i* ‘Ah, if (only) I had!’

7. P. Sallier I, 8, 3-4 (= *LEM*, 86, 2).



hl n.i dhwty m h3.i dw3w

‘Ah, if only I had Thoth behind me (= ‘as protector’) tomorrow!’

In one example, the particle appears in the protasis of a correlative system where it introduces a first present:

8. Doomed Prince, 6, 2-3 (= *LES*, 4, 9-10).



hl [bn]³⁰² *tw.i hr šnt rdwy.i / iw.i hr(=r?) šm r pwyt m-di.tn*

‘Ah, if only I did not suffer with my feet, I would go jumping with you!’

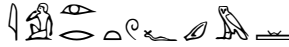
³⁰¹ See Satzinger, *loc. cit.*

³⁰² For the restoration see Wolf, *ZÄS* 68 (1932), 71.

37. The *i.iri.t.f sdm* form

37.1 Introduction³⁰³

The *i.iri.t.f sdm* form derives from the Middle Egyptian perfective *r sdm.t.f* ‘until he heard,’ where the *r*, elided, is indicated by the prosthetic yod, and where the verb is periphrased by the auxiliary *iri*, which is consistent with the evolutionary trend of the language. The *t* ending is usually indicated by ⲟ^{e} and variants, but sometimes it is omitted, which can cause confusion with a second tense. In the majority of cases the construction is:



37.2 Examples

1. O. Berlin P 12654, 10-11 (= *KRI* VI, 344, 16-345, 2).³⁰⁴



iw t3 qnbt hr dd imi n.f 100 n sht šst m-mitt 10 n 3bw mtw.tw dit.f r qhqh m st-m3t i.iri.t t3ty htp n.f

‘The court said: “Deal him a hundred blows with a staff, as well as ten burns, and put him to break stones (*lit.* ‘hammer’) in the Place of Truth until the vizier has pardoned him.”’

2. P. BM 10052, 15, 8-9 (= *KRI* VI, 800, 13-15).



dd t3ty it3y t3y st-hmt imi se rmt s3w i.iri.t.tw gm it3w rmt r s'hc.s

‘The Vizier said: “Take this woman and put her under guard (*lit.* ‘place her as a guarded person’) until one has found a thief (or another) man to accuse her.”’

37.3 Remarks

1. Non-periphrased forms are still attested during the 19th dynasty:

3. O. Nash I, v^o 4 (= *KRI* IV, 316, 15): Seti II.



iw.tw hr w3h t3y.s mdt r iy.t t3ty

‘Her case was suspended until the arrival of the vizier’ (*lit.* ‘until the vizier has come’).

2. From the 21st dynasty onward, the syntagma is reinforced by the preposition $\text{š}^{\text{c}}\text{-}(r)$ ‘until.’ This resulted in the form $\text{š}^{\text{c}}\text{-i.iri.t.f sdm}$, often abbreviated as $\text{š}^{\text{c}}\text{-t.f}$, ancestor of Coptic ⲟⲗⲁⲧⲉⲘⲉⲛⲧⲙⲓ .³⁰⁵

³⁰³ See Gardiner, *JEA* 16 (1930), 231-234, which remains fundamental; Černý-Groll, *LEG*, §33 and 34, p. 415-417; Frandsen, *LEVS*, §56-59, p. 106-108; Winand, *o.l.*, §464-470, p. 292-297.

³⁰⁴ Parallel example: P. Leopold-Amherst, 4, 10-11 (= *KRI* VI, 489, 3-8).

³⁰⁵ See Gardiner, *o.c.*, 234 (4); Winand *o.l.*, §469, p. 296-297.

4. Wenamun, 1, 19-20 (= *LES*, 62, 15-16).

‘If it were a thief belonging to my country the one who went down into your ship and who stole your silver, I would have reimbursed it to you from my treasury,³⁰⁶


ššꜥ.t.w gm pꜣy.k itꜣy

until your thief had been found’ (*lit.* ‘they had found’).

³⁰⁶ Cf. *supra* §36.2, example 3.

38. Recapitulation

38.1 The morpheme *iw* in the synchrony of Late Egyptian

Four different *iw* morphemes can be distinguished in Late Egyptian:

- the ***iw* of the third future** – *iw.f r sdm* – which forms integral part of an independent, and therefore, initial, form. This *iw* can be preceded by *bn*, *wn* (past converter), *nty*, *ptr*, *mk*, *ir*, *yꜣ* and *hr*, or the circumstantial *iw*. It cannot be followed by any of these morphemes.
- the ***iw* of the sequential** – *iw.f hr (tm) sdm* – which forms integral part of a non-independent, non-initial, but not subordinate form. It cannot be preceded or followed by any of the morphemes cited above.
- the **circumstantial *iw***, which transforms an independent form (verbal or nominal) in a non-initial, non-independent, subordinate form. It may be preceded – but not followed – by *ir*, *yꜣ* or *hr*, and can be followed – but not preceded – by *bn*, *wn* or the *iw* of the third future. It has no connection with *ptr* or *mk*.
- the much rarer **parenthetical *iw***,³⁰⁷ which transforms an independent form (almost always the vetitive) in a non-initial, non-independent, but not subordinate, form. It is used in additional distribution with the particle *hr*.³⁰⁸ It is neither preceded, nor followed, by any morpheme.

There result the following combinations:

	<i>bn + iw</i>	<i>third future</i>
	<i>nty + iw</i>	<i>iw</i>
	<i>wn + iw</i>	
	<i>iw + iw</i>	
<i>circumstantial</i>	<i>iw + bn</i>	
<i>iw</i>	<i>iw + wn</i>	

There follows that:

- *iw bn iw* can only be a negative third future preceded by the circumstantial *iw*;³⁰⁹
 - *iw wn iw* can only be a third future preceded by *wn* and the circumstantial *iw*;³¹⁰
- The relationship between *bn* and *wn* is more difficult to establish because, if *wn bn iw r sdm* (third future) appears well attested,³¹¹ *bn wn.f + first present* is also known.³¹²

³⁰⁷ On this ‘fourth’ *iw* see Satzinger, *NÄS*, §2.6.2, p. 227-231.

³⁰⁸ Compare: *hr m-ir šm r tꜣ knbt* ‘And does not go before the court’ (O. Gardiner 109, 15) with *iw m-ir šm r wꜣh wꜣ wꜣty im im.w* ‘And do not proceed to place a single one there among them’ (P. BM 10100, 10 = *LRL*, 50, 12).

³⁰⁹ O. Berlin P 10630, 6-7 (= *KRI* v, 565, 5-6), see *supra* §32.2.1.1, example 6.

³¹⁰ P. Turin 2021, 3, 3-4 (= *KRI* vi, 740, 11-13), see *supra* §32.2.1.1, example 7.

³¹¹ P. BN 197, VI, v° 3 (= *LRL* 64, 13); Wenamun, 2, 29 (= *LES*, 69, 16).

³¹² P. Mayer A, 3, 25 (= *KRI* vi, 810, 13).

From the foregoing there follows that the expression *iw.f* () *sḏm* can be interpreted in four different ways:



<i>third future</i>	<i>iw.f</i> (r) <i>sḏm</i>	he will hear	<i>negative correlate</i>
<i>sequential</i>	<i>iw.f</i> (hr) <i>sḏm</i>	he heard	<i>bn iw.f</i> (r) <i>sḏm</i>
<i>circumstantial first present</i>	<i>iw.f</i> (hr) <i>sḏm</i> (active)	when he hears	<i>iw.f</i> (hr) <i>tm sḏm</i>
	<i>iw.f sḏm.Ø</i> (passive)	when he was heard	<i>iw bn se</i> (hr) <i>sḏm</i>
			<i>iw bwpw.tw sḏm</i>

38.2 The different values of *sḏm.f*

In Late Egyptian a *sḏm.f* form can be interpreted as:

- a **perfective** (in principle limited to transitive verbs), see §15;
- a **prospective** (open to all categories of verbs), see §20 and §26;
- an archaic **second tense** (especially intransitive verbs), see §23.6;
- a **relative form** without prosthetic yod, see §28;
- an **infinitive** with a suffixal direct pronominal object, see §13.2.

38.3 Uses of the prosthetic yod

The prosthetic yod, spelled as  (very frequent) or  (rare), which was pronounced *e*, occurs:

- **always** before the *i.iri.t.f sḏm* form (see §37);
- **almost always** before second tenses (see §23);
- **sometimes** before the imperative (see §21), the participles (see §27), and the relative forms (see §28);
- **never** before the infinitive, except that of the verb *iri*.³¹³

38.4 The morphemes *wnn* and *wn*

The main function of *wnn* is to ‘nominalise’ a verbal sentence (see §34).

wn can be:

- either the morpheme *wn* used in the existential sentence (see §22.1), which subject is, in theory, never defined;
- or the morpheme *wn* used to transpose into the past the first present (see §16), the third future (see §19 and §36.2), rarely the second tenses (see §23, example 6), exceptionally the perfective *sḏm.f*.³¹⁴ This invariable morpheme (called ‘past converter’) is similar to the participle and the relative form of the verb *wnn*, which permit to transpose into the past constructions obtained with *nty* (see §30). The table above (§38.1) shows that the converter *wn* precedes the *iw* of the third future and follows the circumstantial *iw*.

- In principle, the past converter *wn* should not be found after *nty*, only the *wn* of existence can occupy this position.³¹⁵

³¹³ For example: O. Petrie 16, v° 2, see also Winand, *Morphologie*, §257-258 and 260, p. 151-152 and 154.

³¹⁴ See note 299, p. 155.

³¹⁵ But see Wenamun, 2, 28, cited in §16.2, example 7.

38.5 The negative morphemes

bn (formerly *nn*) is used to negate:

- the first present (see §16);
- the third future (see §19);
- the independent prospective *sḍm.f* (see §20);
- the nexus of the periphrased second tense (see §23.4.2) and the modal second tenses (see §23.5).

bw (formerly *n*) is used in the following constructions, which cannot be periphrased:

- *bw sḍm.n.f* (very rare), archaic form of the negative aorist (see §17.3);
- *bw sḍm.f* (quite rare), which can be the negation of the perfective *sḍm.f* (see §15.1.2.3, remark 2), or of the negative aorist (see §17.4);
- *bw sḍm.t.f* (very rare), expressing the nuance ‘not yet’ (see §18.1);
- *bw sḍmy.t N*, passive form corresponding to the previous one (see §18.2).

Or be periphrased by the auxiliary *iri*:

- *bw iri.f sḍm*, negative aorist (see §17.5);
- *bw iri.t.f sḍm* expressing the nuance ‘not yet’ (see §18.1).

bwpwy is used only in the *bwpwy.f sḍm* form, which serves to negate the perfective *sḍm.f* (see §15.1.2), and the first present of some intransitive verbs (particularly verbs of motion) with a pseudo-participle as predicate (see §16.6.2.1).

mn (formerly *nn wn*) is the negative correlate of the *wn* of existence (see §22.2).

tm is used to negate:

- the infinitive, in its non-predicative uses (see §13), as well as the second tenses (see §23.4.2) and the continuative forms: sequential (see §25.2) and conjunctive (see §25.3);
- the non-independent prospective *sḍm.f* in purpose clauses (see §26.2).

NOMINAL FORMS

Handwritten Arabic text in a cursive script, likely a manuscript page. The text is arranged in approximately 15 horizontal lines. The script is dense and characteristic of medieval Islamic manuscripts. The text is written in black ink on a light-colored, possibly parchment or paper, background. The lines are roughly parallel and fill most of the page area.

15

20

25

٢٤١٩

Nominal forms

Nominal forms (sometimes called ‘non-verbal’³¹⁶), theoretically, consist of three types of nominal sentences:

- nominal sentence with adverbial predicate,
- nominal sentence with nominal predicate,
- nominal sentence with adjectival predicate.

In practice, having been used as the basis on which new verb forms (first present and third future) were formed, the nominal sentence with adverbial predicate is integrated in these forms, and was studied at the same time as they were (see §16 and §19).

Therefore, the definition ‘nominal’ will be reserved for those sentences which predicate is either a noun (or equivalent) or an adjective (or equivalent).

Some of them, having the function of rhematiser, that is to say, to rank-shift to marked rheme a nominal element of a plain verbal sentence, will be called, in accordance with current usage, cleft sentences and will be studied separately.

³¹⁶ ‘Un énoncé est ou nominal ou verbal,’ Benveniste, *Problèmes de linguistique générale*, I, p. 157. See also D. Cohen, *La phrase nominale et l’évolution du système verbal en semitique*, Paris 1984, p. 14-15.

39. The nominal sentence with nominal predicate

39.1 Introduction

A nominal sentence with substantival predicate fundamentally articulates **the inclusion of a class of objects A in a class of objects B**. It corresponds to sentences formed using the verb ‘to be’ of the type: *birds are vertebrates*.

Its morphosyntactic analysis is complex because both subject and predicate are nouns, and it is not always possible to use purely morphological criteria to distinguish them.³¹⁷

- Being the word order (also called ‘morpheme order’) the only criterion always applicable, especially in Middle Egyptian, a number of rigid and opposing systems where the order is always ‘subject–predicate’ or ‘predicate–subject,’ have emerged.³¹⁸
- ‘Prinzip: Im (Nichtverbal-) Satz des Ägyptischen, im Nominalsatz ebenso wie im Adverbialsatz, gilt die Reihenfolge Subjekt-Prädikat.’³¹⁹
- ‘Der ägyptische Nominalsatz ist ... eine Satzkonstruktion ... mit einer festen Satzstellung Prädikat-Subjekt verbindet.’³²⁰

In Late Egyptian, the existence of the opposition defined – undefined³²¹ permits to lay down, with D. Cohen, the following rule: **‘the subject cannot be completely undefined, while the predicate is either undefined or defined.’**³²²

However, it can be observed that if the class included (A) is always defined, the inclusive class (B) can be either defined or not. Consequently, A is the subject and B the predicate. Hence the following definition: the nominal sentence asserts that **a class A (= subject) is included in a class B (= predicate)**,³²³ $A \subset B$.

39.2 Classification predication

In general, if the classes A and B do not have the same number of elements, the inclusion of A in B entails that **all the elements of class A are some of class B**,³²⁴ or that **all elements of class A belong to class B – the converse is obviously false.**³²⁵ The noun phrase is then a predication of inclusion in the mathematical sense of the term. To avoid confusion with constructions referring to possession,³²⁶ the expression ‘classification predication’ has been preferred to that of ‘inclusion predication.’

If class A contains only one element, the subject is singular, otherwise it is plural.

For the first two persons the pronominal subject is indicated with the independent pronouns

³¹⁷ Particularly in classical Egyptian, where the opposition defined – undefined is not morphologically marked.

³¹⁸ For critiques of these systems see Groll, *Non verbal* p. 28; Frandsen, *Crossroad*, I, 1987, p. 148-149.

³¹⁹ Schenkel, *Fokussierung, Festschrift Westendorf*, p. 159.

³²⁰ Junge, ‘Nominalsatz und Cleft Sentence im Ägyptischen,’ *Studies presented to H. J. Polotsky*, ed. Young, 1981, 443. See also Roeder, *GM* 91 (1986), 31-32.

³²¹ See *supra* §1.2 and 28.2.

³²² D. Cohen, *La phrase nominale et l'évolution du système verbal en semitique*, Paris 1984, p. 33-34.

³²³ *Loc. cit.*

³²⁴ $(\forall x) (x \in A \Rightarrow x \in B)$.

³²⁵ Because then $(\exists x) (x \in B \text{ et } x \notin A)$, and there is at least one element of B that does not belong to A.

³²⁶ That is to say, membership in the legal sense of the term.

belonging to the **atonic series**, while in the third person it can be either unexpressed (\emptyset) or be represented by a demonstrative pronoun (*pzy, tzy, nzy*).³²⁷

The predicate B is **never defined**.

The construction is **unmarked**, with the subject carrying the theme and the predicate the rheme.

The base paradigm is the following:

Singular	1 st person	<i>ink B</i>	‘I am a B’
	2 nd person	<i>ntk / ntj B</i>	‘you are (fem.) a B’
	3 rd person	<i>B pzy / tzy</i> or <i>B \emptyset</i>	‘it is a (masc./fem.) B’
Plural	1 st person	<i>inn B</i>	‘we are B’
	2 nd person	<i>nttn B</i>	‘you are B’
	3 rd person	<i>B nzy</i> or <i>B \emptyset</i>	‘these are B’

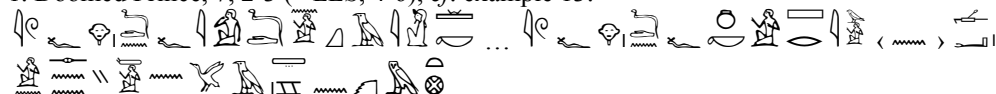
The forms listed in the table are independent, but can be transformed into non-independent forms with the value of adverbial clauses using the converter *iw*. They are negated by means of the discontinuous negative morphemes *bn ... iwnz*.

Very important note. Since the classification predication expresses the **essence** of being, it is **timeless**: *ink ntr* ‘I am a god’ means ‘I am of divine nature.’ It is opposed to the ‘locational predication’ *tw.i m ntr* ‘I am (like) a god’ – but I am not of divine nature, and this is only a temporary situation.

39.2.1 Examples in the first two persons

39.2.1.1 General case: the predicate is a noun

1. Doomed Prince, 7, 2-3 (= *LES*, 4-6); cf. example 13.



iw.f hr dd n.f i.dd n.i qi.k ... iw.f hr dd n.f ink šri <n> w^c n snny n pzy tzy n kmt

‘He said to him: “Tell me (what is) your situation ...” He replied to him: “I am son of an officer of the land of Egypt.”’³²⁸

Examples with the thematisation of the subject:

2. Mès, N 2 (= *KRI* III, 425, 4-5); cf. example 29.



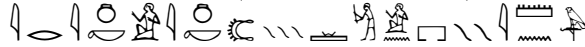
ir ink ink šri n hwy sz wrt [szt] nšy

‘As for me, I am son of Huy, son of Werel, descendant (*lit.* ‘daughter’) of Neshy.’

³²⁷ Consequently *ntf B*, *nts B*, or *ntw B* do not exist, see §7.4.

³²⁸ That is to say, ‘I belong to a class of Egyptian officers’ sons.’

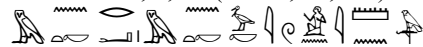
3. P. BM 10052, 1, 8 (= *KRI* vi, 767, 15-16).



ir ink ink ihwty n pr inn

‘As for me, I am a farmer of the temple of Amun.’

4. Wenamun, 2, 32 (= *LES*, 70, 4-5).³²⁹



ntk m-r ntk bsk n inn

‘You too, you are a servant of Amun.’

▪ If in these examples the second independent pronoun (the subject) belongs to the atonic series, by contrast, the first, the topic, belongs to the tonic series, as shown by Coptic: *ANOK ANĪ OYQWMMO* ‘Me, I am a stranger’ (Ruth, II, 10).

Interrogative examples:

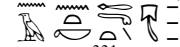
5. Wenamun, 2, 13 (= *LES*, 68, 7-8).



*in ink bsk n pz iri wd.k m-r*³³⁰

‘Am I (also) servant of the one who sent you?’

6. P. Anastasi V, 10, 9 (= *LEM*, 61, 5).

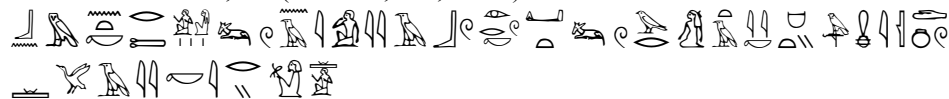


*in ntk*³³¹

‘Are you a donkey?’

Negative examples:

7. O. Berlin P 10627, 5-7 (= *KRI* vi, 155, 12-14).



bn ntk rmt iwntz yz bw iri.k dit iwr tzy.k hmt mi-qd pzy.k iry

‘You are no man, because you are not able to impregnate your wife like everybody else! (*lit.* ‘like your similar’).

8. O. Gardiner 273, 6 (= *KRI* vii, 355, 6-7).




bn ink iwty hsty iwntz

‘I am not a heartless.’

³²⁹ Another example: *ntk nht*-^c ‘You are one strong of arm,’ P. Anastasi I, 10, 7.

³³⁰ Note the spelling of *in* and see next note.

³³¹ Note the spelling of *in* and, for a parallel with the spelling , see Gardiner, *LEM*, 61a, n. 5c.

Circumstantial example:

9. Wenamun, 2, 81 (= *LES*, 75, 12).

iw ink ipwty n imm

‘While I am a messenger of Amun.’

39.2.1.2 Special case: the predicate is an interrogative pronoun

The pronouns employed in this case are *nim* ‘who?’ and *ih* ‘what?’

10. P. Orbiney, 15, 9 (= *LES*, 25, 10); cf. example 18.

ntk³³² nim tr

‘Who are you (then)?’ (*lit.* ‘you are who?’³³³).

11. Qadesh Bulletin, 35 (= *KRI* II, 110, 3).

dd-in hm.f n.sn ntwtn ih

‘His Majesty said to them: “What are you?”’ (*lit.* ‘You are what?’³³⁴.) Note the spelling of the atonic independent pronoun corresponding to $\bar{N}T\epsilon\bar{N}$.

39.2.2 Examples in the third person

These constructions derive from the classical construction *B pw*, where *pw* disappeared, or rather, was actualised in *p3y*, *t3y*, *n3y*.

39.2.2.1 Examples of the form *B Ø*

In this case, the sentence is reduced to the single predicate, the subject being unexpressed.

12. P. Anastasi I, 10, 3-4:³³⁵ concerning a strange animal.

ir ptr.k se m rwh3 n(=m) p3 kkw hr-dd.k 3pd r.f

‘If you see it in the evening, in the dark, you will have to say about him: “It is a bird!”’ Note the aorist form *hr-sdm.f* in the apodosis, see *supra* §17.6.

The nominal predicate can be followed by an indirect genitive:

³³² \bar{A} should be deleted, see Gardiner, *ZAS* 69 (1933), 70 -71.

³³³ Cf. Coptic $\bar{N}TOK \text{ } \text{ } \bar{N}T\bar{K} \text{ } NIM$ ‘You then, who are you?’ (John 1, 22). Note that **ntf nim* does not exist; the interrogative is always the rheme, while *ntf*, a tonic pronoun, cannot be the theme. The sentence, therefore, is written *nim Ø*, see example 18 below.

³³⁴ Not ‘You are who?’ – the individuals in question being not worthy of the status of human beings.

³³⁵ Parallel example: P. Ashmolean Museum 1945.96 (= P. Adoption), v^o 6-7 (= *KRI* VI, 738, 1-3).

13. Doomed Prince, 6, 8-9 (= *LES*, 5, 3-5); cf. example 1.



wn-in p3 wr hr ndnd.f m-dd šri (n) nīm m n3 n wrw – iw.tw hr dd n.f šri n w^c n snny

‘The prince enquired of him, saying: “Of which great one is he son?”’ (*lit.* ‘He is a son of whom among the great ones?’). He was told: “He is a son of official” (*lit.* ‘of an official’).’

Examples where the nominal predicate is followed by an attributive participle and by an adverbial clause playing the role of a relative:

14. P. Bankes I, v^o 2 (= *JEA* 68 (1982), 129).



mtw.k ʿm r-dd b3k(t) i3zy iw m p3y hry mrt (t).i3z se

‘And that you learn that it is a stolen servant, who was abducted precisely by this (person) in charge of the household servants’ (*lit.* ‘who was stolen, while it is this (person) in charge ... who stole her’³³⁶).

15. P. Geneva D 407, v^o 18 (= *LRL*, 16, 8-9).



tw.n rh.tw r-dd rmt mr iw bwpw.f irt mš^c ///

‘We know that it is a sick man who has not made the journey ///.’

Remark. The predicate can take the form *wmn* V, where V is an independent verbal form nominalised by *wmn*, see *supra* §34.3 and §18.2, example 4.

Circumstantial examples:

16. Dakhla Stela, 7 (= *JEA* 19 (1933), pl. v): 22nd dynasty; cf. example 22.



iw hmt (n) nmhyw

‘While it is a private well’ (*lit.* ‘of private individuals’).

17. P. Turin 2021, 3, 11-12 (= *KRI* VI, 741, 9-11); cf. example 44.



ddt.n i3ty ir iw bn hmt swt iw n3 iw h3[r(t)] nh3y(t) iw mr.f se iw.f (hr) dit n.s 3ht.f [nim] i.iri.f wsf p3 iry.f

‘What the vizier said: “If this was not a wife of his,³³⁷ (but) it was a Syrian (or) a Nubian, whom

³³⁶ See Navailles-Neveu, *GM* 103 (1988), 58, n. v.

³³⁷ That is to say ‘a woman with whom he is married,’ and not ‘his woman,’ which would be *i3y.f hmt*, see example 44 below, and *infra* §41.4.

he loved and bequeathed her his property, who would undo what he had done?” (*lit.* ‘it is who, who would undo ...’).

The four circumstantials (two nominal and two verbal), placed at the beginning, form a quadruple protasis introduced by *ir*, while the apodosis includes a real cleft sentence.

Examples where the predicate is an interrogative pronoun:

18. P. BM 10052, 14, 14 (= *KRI* vi, 798, 14); *cf.* example 10 and 25.

dd.tw n.f nīm sp-sn dd.f

‘It was said to him: “Who is it? Who is it?” He replied ...’

19. P. DM IV, 5 (= *KRI* vi, 265, 1); *cf.* example 26 and 27.

hn^c dd y3 ih iry.i ih (m) bt3 r.k

‘Another matter: Well, what? What kind of evil deed have I committed against you?’

39.2.2.2 Examples of the form *B p3y*³³⁸

20. Doomed Prince, 4, 8-9 (= *LES*, 2, 4-5)

ih p3 nty hr sm m-s3 p3 s c3 nty m iyt hr [t3] mit iw.f (hr) dd n.f tsm p3y

‘What is that walking (*lit.* ‘it is what that which walks’) behind the older man who is coming down the road? He said to him: “It is a dog.”’

21. P. Turin 2026, 18 (= *LRL*, 73, 1).

ih m mdt t3y

‘What kind of matter is this?’ (*lit.* ‘it is what as matter?’)

22. Dakhla Stela, 12 (= *JEA* 19 (1933), pl. VI): 22nd dynasty; *cf.* example 16.

iw mw (n) nmhyw n3(y)

‘While these are private waters.’

39.2.2.3 Extensions of previous constructions

In Middle Egyptian, the construction *B pw* gives, by explicature of *pw*, *B pw A* ‘it is (a) *B*, *A*’ – where *A* is in apposition to the subject *pw* – then, by thematisation (or topicalisation) of *A*, *ir A B pw* ‘as for *A*, it is (a) *B*.’

³³⁸ The negation *bn B p3y iwn3* is not attested: *bn B iwn3* is used instead, as is the case with *B Ø*.

The same constructions are found in Late Egyptian, except that *A*, perceived as the subject, is almost always defined, and *pw* disappears or is actualised in *p3y*, *t3y*, *n3y*. The thematisation can be done with or without *ir*, thus resulting in:

B pw A ► *B Ø p3 A*
ir A B pw ► *ir p3 A B p3y* or *ir p3 A B Ø* or *p3 A B p3y* or *p3 A B Ø*

39.2.2.3.1 Examples of the form *B Ø p3 A* (it is a B, the A)

Case where B is a noun (rare examples):

23. P. Turin 1979, v° 1-2 (= *LRL*, 43, 4).



hr sn ink p3y [rm]

‘Because this man is one of my brothers’ (*lit.* ‘Because it is a brother of mine, this man’).

24. O. Nash 1, v° 1-3 (= *KRI* IV, 316, 13-14).



h.c.n t3 qnbt hr dd q3t 3(t) nh-n-niwt hry-i3 3zi (n) mwt

‘The court said: “The lady Herya is a great criminal deserving of death” (*lit.* ‘It is a great criminal ... the lady Herya’).

Case where B is an interrogative pronoun (frequent examples):

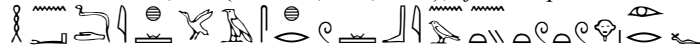
25. Mès, N 15 (= *KRI* III, 428, 8-9); *cf.* example 18.



iw t3ty hr dd n nwb-nfirt nim p3y.t iw

‘The Vizier said to Nebnefert: “Who is your heir?”’ (*lit.* ‘It is who, your heir?’).

26. O. DM 446, 2-3 (= *KRI* II, 383, 9-10); *cf.* example 19.



hn dd ih p3 shr bin nty tw.tw hr iri.f

‘Another thing: what is this bad thing that is being done?’ (*lit.* ‘It is what, this evil plan ...’).

At the beginning of the nineteenth dynasty *pw* is sometimes still attested:

27. P. Cairo 58083, r° 3 (= *KRI* I, 322, 6-7): Seti I.



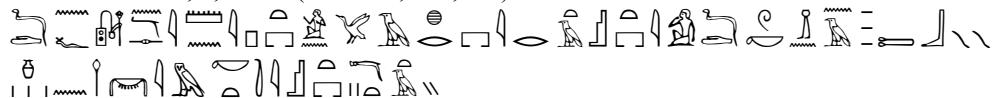
ih pw p3y.tn irt (m)-mitt

‘What is the meaning of your acting so?’ (*lit.* ‘It is what, your acting so?’).

39.2.2.3.2 Examples of the form *ir p3 A B p3y* and variants

ir p3 A B p3y ‘As for A, it is a B’ (examples quite rare)

28. P. BM 10052, 5, 21-22 (= *KRI* VI, 781, 3-5).



dd n.f sš ny-se-imm-(m)-ipt n p3 hr ir t3 st i.dd.k in n3 tbw n hđ im kt st (i).mḥ 2 t3y

‘The Scribe of the Tomb Nesamunemope said to him: “As for the tomb from which you said that the silver vessels had been taken away, is it another, a second grave?”’ (*lit.* ‘another tomb that completes the two’).

ir p3 A B Ø ‘As for A, it is a B’ (frequent examples)

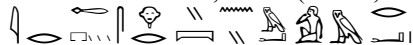
29 Mès, N 31 (= *KRI* III, 430,13); *cf.* example 2.



ir sš ḥwy šri n wrl hr ir wrl šrit n nšy

‘As for the scribe Huy, he is a son of Werel, and as for Werel, she is a descendant (*lit.* ‘daughter’) of Neshy.’

30. P. Berlin 10487, 9-v° 1 (= *LRL*, 36, 11).

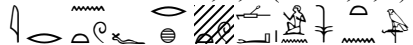


ir pr-ʿ3 ʿ.w.s. ḥry (n) nīm m-rʿ

‘As for Pharaoh l.p.h., of whom is he still master?’ (*lit.* ‘it is a master of whom, still?’).

Example where *p3 A* is a tonic independent pronoun:

31. Doomed Prince, 4, 1 (= *LES*, 1, 1).



ir ntf hr. [tw] wʿ n nsw

‘As for him – it was said – (it) was a king.’

p3 A B p3y ‘The A, it is a B’ (very rare examples)

32. O. DM 437, 1-3.



ir p3 dd i.iri.k 3bd n hrw r p3y m-dr in.tw n.i qđ p3 ḥ3y i.iri.k (=i) b3k p3y ptr tw.i hr dit in.tw n.k///

‘As for what you said (to me) a month ago, after the gypsum was brought to me: “the descent³³⁹ that I have³⁴⁰ made, it is a job!” – see, I have sent to you ///.’

³³⁹ The journey from Deir el-Medina to the Nile valley to deliver the gypsum.

³⁴⁰ Pronoun confusion – Egyptian is often faltering between direct and indirect speech.

$p\text{z}$ A B \emptyset ‘The A, it is a B’ (quite rare examples)

33. Amenemope, 8, 4-5.

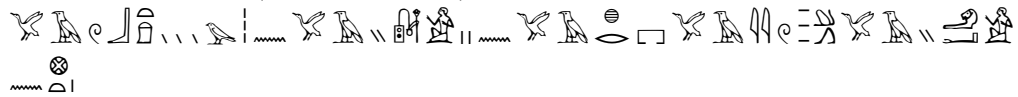


iw $p\text{z}y$.f pr $hft(y)$ n $p\text{z}$ dmi

‘Because his house, it is an enemy of the city.’

Example where $p\text{z}$ A is a demonstrative pronoun:

34. P. Abbott, 6, 20-21 (= *KRI* VI, 479, 6-7).³⁴¹



$p\text{z}w$ $bt\text{z}$ n $p\text{z}y$ $s\check{s}$ 2 n $p\text{z}$ hr $p\text{z}y$.w ph $p\text{z}y$ $h\text{z}ty$ - ϵ n $niwt$

‘That, it is a wrongdoing on the part of these two scribes of the Tomb, (namely) for addressing (*lit.* ‘their reaching’) this Major of the City.’

39.3 Identification predication

In the specific case where the classes A and B have the same number of elements, the inclusion of A in B entails that all elements of class A belong to class B – but also, **the converse then being true**, that all the elements of B are elements of A. It follows that **classes A and B contain exactly the same elements** and are, therefore, **identical: A = B**.

The nominal sentence then corresponds to an **identification sentence** in which A and B denote the same object class, or the same object if they only contain one each – which implies that subject and predicate have the same degree of definition. Given that **the subject is always defined, so will the predicate be**.

The following are two examples in English (sentences with the verb ‘to be’):

- **the** Bellfontains are **the** inhabitants of Fontainebleau;
- **the** Marseillaise is **the** national anthem of France.

There are two base paradigms:

- the first, isomorphic to the paradigm of the classification predication, is unmarked: the predicate $p\text{z}$ B carries the rheme, and the subject the theme. This paradigm employs as subject the atonic independent pronoun for the first two persons, and the demonstrative or \emptyset in the third person;
- the second is marked: it is the subject that becomes the rheme vector, while the predicate $p\text{z}$ B carries the theme. This paradigm uses the independent tonic pronoun as subject for all persons.

³⁴¹ Parallel example: P. Abbott, 6, 16-17 (= *KRI* VI, 478, 15-479, 1).

		Unmarked paradigm (atonic independent pronoun)		Marked paradigm (tonic independent pronoun)	
<i>singular</i>	1 st p.	<i>ink p3 B</i>	I am the B	<i>ink p3 B</i>	it is me, the B
		<i>ink t3 B</i>	I am the (fem.) B	<i>ink t3 B</i>	it is me, the (fem.) B
	2 nd p.	<i>ntk p3 B</i>	you are the B	<i>ntk p3 B</i>	it is you, the B
		<i>ntt t3 B</i>	you are the (fem.) B	<i>ntt t3 B</i>	it is you, the (fem.) B
	3 rd p.	<i>p3/t3 B Ø</i>	it is the (masc./fem.) B	<i>ntf p3 B</i>	it is him, the B
		<i>p3 B p3y</i>	it is the B	<i>nts t3 B</i>	it is her, the B
<i>t3 B t3y</i>		it is the (fem.) B			
<i>plural</i>	1 st p.	<i>inn n3 B</i>	we are the B	<i>inn n3 B</i>	it is us, the B
	2 nd p.	<i>nttn n3 B</i>	you are the B	<i>nttn n3 B</i>	it is you, the B
	3 rd p.	<i>n3 B Ø</i>	they are the B		
		<i>n3 B n3y</i>	they are the B	<i>ntw n3 B</i>	it is them, the B

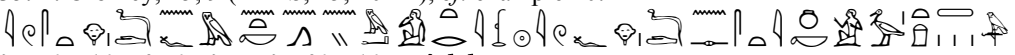
In the texts, these two paradigms are differentiated only in the third person, where *p3 B* (*p3y*) is opposed to *ntf p3 B*. In pronunciation, the vocalisation (ʌNĪ versus ʌNOK) and supra-segmental features,³⁴² allows one to distinguish easily between all persons.

As before, all these constructions are independent and can be transformed into adverbial clauses by means of the converter *iw*. They are also negated using the discontinuous negation *bn* ... *iw n3*.

39.3.1 Examples in the first two persons

Neither paradigms are distinguished in writing, and the context does not always allow one to determine with which case one is dealing. In principle, all examples can be rendered either by marked or unmarked constructions.

35. P. Orbiney, 15, 9 (= LES, 25, 10-11); cf. example 10.


iw.s hr dd n.f ntk nim tr iw.f hr dd n.s ink b3t3

‘She asked him: “Who are you then?” He said to her: “I am Bata.”’ The question asked (‘Who are you (then)?’) shows that this is an unmarked paradigm. Otherwise the question would have been **nim b3t3* ‘Who is Bata?’ – resulting in the marked response ‘It is I (ʌNOK), Bata.’

³⁴² Cf. English, where ‘I am the king’ (unmarked construction where the subject corresponds to the theme) contrasts, through intonation, with ‘I am the king’ (marked construction where the subject coincides with the rheme).

36. Graffito of year 34 of Ramses II, 4 (= *KRI* III, 436, 11): address to a god.



tw.i r-gs.tn ink p3y.tn b3k

‘I am close to you, I am your servant.’ The first form is unmarked,³⁴³ and it is likely that what we have here is also an unmarked paradigm.

37. Wenamun, 1, 13 (= *LES*, 62, 5).



hr ntk p3 wr n p3y t3

‘Now, it is you, the prince of this country.’ The sentence is certainly marked; Wenamun is addressing the prince in his official capacity.

38. P. Turin 1880, 4, 1-2 (= *RAD*, 57, 6-7).



ddt.n rmt ist p(3)-n-nqt n sš imn-nht 3z n ist hnsw – ntn n3y.i hryw hr ntn n3 rwdw n p3 hr

‘What the worker Penanuket said to the scribe Amennakht and the foreman Khonsu: “You are my superiors and you are the officials of the Tomb.”’

But nothing in the co(n)text precludes translating the passage as: ‘It is you my superiors and it is you the officials of the Tomb,’ or again: ‘You are my superiors because it is you, the officials of the Tomb’ – *everything was down to the intonation*.

Negative example:

39. P. Leiden I 369, 8-9 (= *LRL*, 2, 1).³⁴⁴

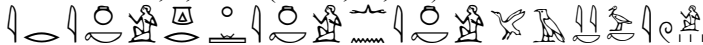


hr ink p3y.tn nfr bn ink p3y.tn bin iwnt3

‘Because I am your friend, I am not your enemy.’³⁴⁵ Or ‘For it is I your friend, it is not I your enemy.’

Interrogative example with thematisation of the subject:

40. Wenamun, 2, 12-13 (= *LES*, 68, 7-8).³⁴⁶



ir ink gr ink in ink p3y.k b3k

‘As for me, me too, am I your servant?’

Interro-negative example:

³⁴³ Marked correlate: **ink p3 nty r-gs.tn* ‘it is I who is next to you,’ pseudo-cleft sentence.

³⁴⁴ Another example: P. DM IV, 6 (= *KRI* VI, 265, 2).

³⁴⁵ *Lit.* ‘I am your good, I am not your evil.’

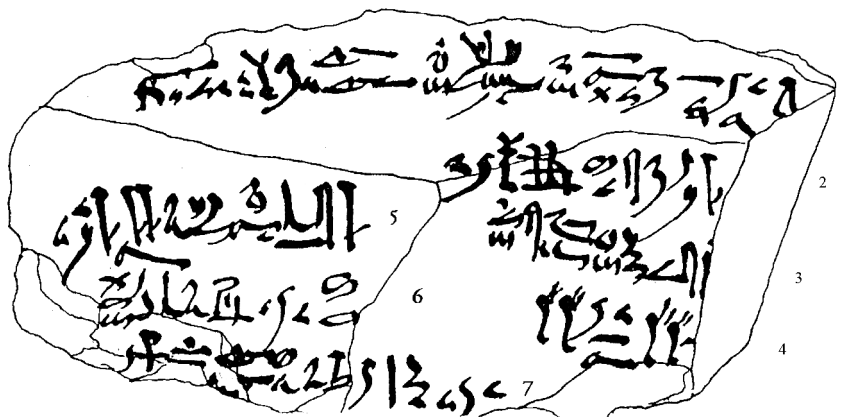
³⁴⁶ Another example: Horus and Seth, 4, 4 (= *LES*, 41, 12).

41. O. Berlin P 11247, v° 5 (= *KRI* III, 533, 7).



is bn ink pzy.k it

‘Am I not your father?’ or ‘Is it not I, your father?’

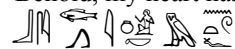


O. Berlin P. 11247, v° 5 (*cf.* p. 60, 81)

Example with the optative particle *bsi*, where *pꜣ B* is an independent pronoun:

42. P. Anastasi IV, 5, 1 (= *LEM*, 39, 10).

‘Behold, my heart has gone furtively, it went south to see Memphis.’



bsi ink ntf

‘Ah, if only I were it.’

The construction is unmarked because the predicate *ntf* can only belong to the tonic series ($\bar{N}T\bar{O}C$); it is this that carries the rheme. Consequently, the subject *ink* is an atonic independent pronoun ($\lambda N\bar{I}$) corresponding to theme.³⁴⁷

39.3.2 Examples in the third person

39.3.2.1 Examples of the unmarked paradigm

The same constructions are found in the classification sentence (see above §39.2.2), except that the predicate B is now defined.

39.3.2.1.1 Examples of the form *pꜣ B Ø*

³⁴⁷ The marked construction is attested in Middle Egyptian: *ink pw sw* ‘It is I (who is) him’ (CT VII, 478, i).

43. P. Bankes I, 16-17 (= *JEA* 68 (1982), 128).



r-dd t3y.n snt hr.w r.s

‘Saying: “It is our sister!” So they declared about it.’

Negative example:

44. O. DM 439, 1; cf. example 17.



hr bn t3y.i hmt iwn3

‘For this is not my wife!’

Adverbial examples:

45. P. Ashmolean Museum 1945.96 (= P. Adoption), 21 (= *KRI* VI, 737, 3) (fig. p. 38).³⁴⁸



iw p3y.i sn šri

‘Given that it is my younger brother.’

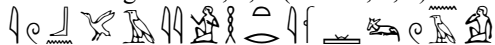
46. P. Turin 2021 3, 1 + P. Geneva D 409, 3, 1 (= *KRI* VI, 740, 8-9).



iw p3(y.i) 2/3 hr p3y.s 1/3

‘Given that these are my 2/3 over and above her 1/3.’

47. P. Bologna 1094, 6, 5 (= *LEM*, 6, 5).



iw bn p3y.i htr iwn3

‘Because it is not my tax.’

39.3.2.1.2 Examples of the form *p3 B p3y*³⁴⁹

48. Truth and Falsehood, 5, 7 (= *LES*, 33, 3-4).



wn.in t3y.f mwt hr dd n.f tw.k (hr) ptr p3y k3mn nty hms r-gs p3 sb3 p3y.k it p3y i.n.s hr dd n.f

‘His mother said to him: “You see this blind man who is seated by the door? He is your father”
So she said to him.’

³⁴⁸ Note, the text of *KRI* is incorrect since it omits the *iw*, see *JEA* 26 (1941), pl. VI and VIa.

³⁴⁹ As in the case of *B p3y*, there is no attested negation **bn p3 B p3y iwn3*; *bn p3 B iwn3* is used.

49. P. BM 10052, 5, 17 (= *KRI* vi, 780, 12).

dd.f p3 shr (n) šm i.iri.i 'q3 p3y

‘He said: “This is exactly the manner (in) which I went”’ (*lit.* ‘the manner of going that I made exactly’).

50. O. BM 5631, 12 (= *HO*, 88).

n3 n sdbhw n t3 k3t (i).wn r-ht p3 it n p3y.i it n3(y)

‘These are the work-tools (*lit.* ‘work, construction’) which were under the responsibility of the father of my father.’

Example where the predicate is an independent pronoun:

51. P. BN 198, II, 11 (= *LRL*, 68, 1-2).³⁵⁰

ink p3y p3 sbi i.iri.i irm.k p3y

‘Such am I, and such is the joke that I have made on you.’ (*lit.* ‘it is I (Δ NOK) and it is a joke that I have made with you’).

Circumstantial example:

52. P. Sallier I, 4, 1-2 (= *LEM*, 80, 4-6).

*y3 ih p3y.k tm dit in.tw mnht r ms n pr-ε3 'w.s. hr tw p3 hrw (n) n3 ibw (n) n3 'nhw swhtwt
3pdw smw p3y*

‘Well, why have you not had presents brought to offer to Pharaoh l.p.h., and this although it is the day of the kids, goats, eggs, birds (and) vegetables?’ (*lit.* ‘well, it is what your not having had brought ...’).

39.3.2.1.3 Examples of the form *ir p3 A p3 B Ø*³⁵¹

53. P. Mayer A, 3, 23 (= *KRI* vi, 810, 9).

ir p3y rmt p3 iry n bw-h3'.f

‘As for this man, it is the accomplice of Bukhaaf.’

³⁵⁰ Examples in Middle Egyptian: *ink pw* ‘It is I’ (CT vi, 354, g), *ntf pw m m3't* ‘It is he, in truth’ (Sinuhe B, 267).

³⁵¹ Example in Middle Egyptian: *ir sf wsir pw* ‘As for yesterday, it is Osiris’ (CT iv, 193).

54. Wenamun, 2, 10 (= *LES*, 68, 3-4).



ir p3 hq3 n kmt p3 nb n p3y.i

‘As for the ruler of Egypt, is he the master of my property?’ The context shows clearly that this is a rhetorical question without an interrogative morpheme. Below will be found the marked form (*ir p3 A ntf p3 B*) of the last two examples (examples 57 and 58).

Circumstantial example:

55. O. Gardiner 55, v° 1-3 (= *HO*, 66, 2).³⁵²



iw ir n3 hnw i.di.f [n.i] p3 2/3 ddyt n.i m-dr ps.f irm t3y.w mwt

‘Whereas, as regards the property that he has given (me), these are the two-thirds which were attributed to me when he settled the division (*lit.* ‘shared’) with their mother.’

39.3.2.1.4 Example of the form *p3 A p3 B Ø*

56. P. Leiden I, 371, 2-3: letter to a dead person.



iri.i ih r.i p3 ir.n.(t) p3(y).i dit drt im.i

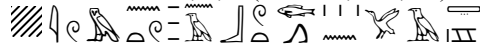
‘What have I done against you? What you have done is to lay (*lit.* ‘your laying’) a hand on me.’³⁵³

39.3.2.2 Examples belonging to the marked paradigm

They are of the form *p3 ntf B*, where *ntf* is both subject and rheme, while *p3 B* is predicate and theme.

Circumstantial example:

57. P. Turin 1875, 1, 9 (= *KRI* v, 350, 10).

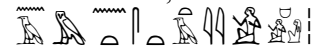


/// iw ntw n3 bwt n p3 t3

‘(...) because it is they, the shame (*lit.* ‘the abominations’) of the country!’

Interrogative example:

58. O. DM 439, 1-3.³⁵⁴



in nts t3y.i hmt

‘Is she my wife?’

³⁵² Similar example: P. Orbiney, 8, 3 (= *LES*, 17, 11-12).

³⁵³ That is to say, ‘torment me.’

³⁵⁴ See *RdE* 33 (1981), 11-20.

Thematised examples (*ir p3 A ntf p3 B*):

59. Theban tomb n. 157 (*nb-wnn.f*) (= *KRI* III, 284, 1-3).



ir it.i imn ... ntf p3 nb psdt

‘As for my father Amun ... it is him, the master of the Enneade.’

60. Wenamun, 2, 30-31 (= *LES*, 70, 1-3).



hr ir imn-r nsw ntrw ntf p3 nb n p3 nh snb - hr ntf p3 nb (n) nzy.k ityw

‘And, as for Amun-Ra, king of the gods, he is the master of Life (and) Health; and it was him, the master of your ancestors!’

The unmarked form (*ir p3 A B Ø*³⁵⁵) of the last two examples has been given above (examples 53 and 54).

39.4 Important remark

*In accordance with common practice, the two-member nominal forms having as second member a nominalised, defined relative clause, and which serve to rhematise a nominal element of a plain verbal sentence, are treated in the chapter devoted to cleft sentences.*³⁵⁶

³⁵⁵ The unmarked correlate of example 60 would be **hr ir imn-r nsw ntrw p3 nb n p3 nh snb (p3y)*.

³⁵⁶ Example: *p3 ptr.i p3 dd.i* ‘It is what I saw that I said’ (P. BM 10052, 5, 8-9 = *KRI* VI, 779, 13); predicative plain verbal sentence: **dd.i p3 ptr.i* ‘I have said what I saw.’

40. The nominal sentence with adjectival predicate

40.1 Introduction

The nominal sentence with adjectival predicate is a special case of the classification predication of the type **B Ø**, where the predicate is a nominalised adjective, which is never defined.

nfr Ø ‘it is good’ (‘belongs to the class of good ones’³⁵⁷)

In this construction *nfr* is both the predicate and the rheme. The extension of the subject Ø can be either *se* or (*p3*) A, A being almost always defined.³⁵⁸

nfr Ø *se* ‘he is good’ (it is a good (one), him)
nfr Ø (*p3*) A ‘the A is good’ (it is a good (one), the A)³⁵⁹

This nominal sentence,³⁶⁰ expressing a **quality** of the subject, presented as intrinsic or permanent,³⁶¹ is also called ‘**predication of quality**’ and is obviously timeless.

In Late Egyptian it tends to disappear and is only used with a small number of adjectives: *nfr*, *bin*, *ꜥꜥ3*, *m3ꜥ*, *nꜥm*, *š3w*, etc., because it rivalled with the construction *nfr sw* Ø (first present whose predicate is a pseudo-participle). It is negated by the discontinuous negative morphemes *bn* ... *iwꜥ3*.

40.2 *nfr* Ø

This type of sentence is quite frequent in daily life texts.

1. P. BM 10052, 5, 22 (= *KRI* vi, 781, 5).

dd.f ꜥꜥ3

‘He said: “It is false!”’

2. O. UCL 19614, 5 (= *KRI* v, 2, 3).

iw.tw hr h3ꜥ.f r-dd bin

‘It was rejected saying: “It is bad!”’

³⁵⁷ Callender, *Middle Egyptian*, 1975, p. 68.

³⁵⁸ The fact that A, which is only the extension of the real subject (Ø), is undefined does not contradict the ‘Cohen Rule’ (see *supra* §39.1): *nfr* Ø A ‘it is a good (one, namely an) A,’ the quality being true for all members of the class A.

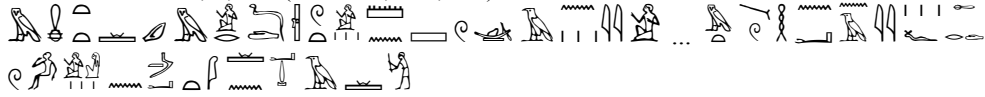
³⁵⁹ For the case when A is undefined, see the previous note.

³⁶⁰ Probable origin of three sentences: *A pw*, *A pw sw*, *A pw B*, with *A = nfr* and *pw = Ø*. Example: *hꜥns pw n wsh* *is pw* ‘It was narrow, it was not wide’ (Eloquent peasant, R 45).

³⁶¹ The nominal sentence with adjectival predicate is used, in Late Egyptian, only in the third person – the **usual** paradigm of the predication of quality being: *ink nfr*, *ntk nfr*, *nfr* Ø, *nfr sw* ‘I am good (I am a good [one]), you are good, it is good, he is good.’ Note that *nfr nfr* is impossible in Late Egyptian – *nfr* is undefined – and that *nfr wi* and *nfr tw* are attested in the Coffin Texts.

Interrogative example:

3. P. Anastasi VIII, 1, 6-8 (= *KRI* III, 500, 6-9).

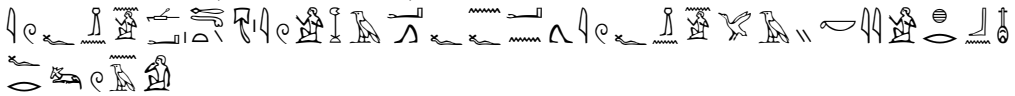


m-mitt sdm.i r-dd ist mnš zny ... mwt hn^c nzy.f hrdw (i)n mš^c (i)n ‘dž

‘And also: I heard that the bargeman³⁶² Any ... is dead, together with his children; is it true or is it false?’

Negative example:

4. O. Petrie 14, 6-7 (= *KRI* v, 524, 7-8).



iw.f (hr) in.n.i w^c z iw.i (hr) hz^c.f n.f ‘n iw.f (hr) in.n.i pzy ky hr bn nfr iwnz

‘He brought me a donkey, I sent it back to him. He brought me this other (one) – and it is not good!’ (*lit.* ‘it is not a good (one)’).

40.3 *nfr* Ø *se*

Literary and infrequent.³⁶³

5. P. Lansing, 2, 2-3 (= *LEM*, 100, 12-13).



snsn n.k tš wty pš gsty ndm se r šdhw ir sšw n pš nty rh se žh se r izwt nbt

‘Take as companions³⁶⁴ the papyrus-roll and the palette: they are more pleasant than pomegranate(?) wine. As for writing, to the one who masters it, they are more profitable than any other job!’

40.4 *nfr* Ø (*pš*) *A*

Cases where the extension of the subject (*pš*) *A* is undefined are very rare.³⁶⁵

6. P. BM 10052, 3, 18 (= *KRI* VI, 774, 9).



dd n.f tšty ‘dž pš dd.k

‘The vizier said to him: “What you said is false”’ (*lit.* ‘It is a false (thing), what you said’).

³⁶² *Lit.* ‘barge sailor.’

³⁶³ Another example: *šž se r šcw nw wdbw* ‘they are more numerous than the sand of the beaches,’ Qadesh Bulletin, §50 (= *KRI* II, 112, 5-8).

³⁶⁴ *Lit.* ‘Fraternize with, socialise, adopt.’

³⁶⁵ See above §40.1; for example: P. Leiden I 371, 36 *bn ššw dit iry se pš nty mi-qd.i* ‘it is not appropriate to cause that someone like me does it,’ see Černý, *BIFAO* 41 (1941), 114.

7. P. Turin 1977, 9 (= Bakir, *Epistolography*, pl. 26).



hr nfr p3 h3b (i).iri.k n.i r-dd tw.i m šs

‘And the letter that you sent me (*lit.* ‘the sending you made to me’), saying: “I am well,” it is a good (thing)!’

Interrogative example:

8. O. IFAO 682 (= *BIFAO* 41 (1941), 15).



in nfr p3 ih

‘The ox, is it good?’

Example after *nty*:

9. O. Nash 2, v° 4-5 (= *KRI* IV, 319, 5).



p3 nty bin p3y.f b3w r mwt

‘He whose anger is more lethal (*lit.* ‘bad’) than death.’

Circumstantial example:

10. P. Anastasi IX, 2 (= *KRI* III, 505, 4).



hr iw m3c p3 i.dd.k

‘And, although what you have said is true.’

Example where the sentence plays the role of a complement clause:

11. P. Anastasi IX, 11 (= *KRI* III, 506, 12).



m.k r-dd m3c p3 i.dd.i

‘May you realise that what I said is true!’

Negative example:

12. P. DM v, v° 3 (= *KRI* VI, 266, 8).



bn nfr iwn3 p3 i.iri.k r.i m-dwn sp-sn sp-sn

‘What you have not ceased to do against me is not good’ (*lit.* ‘It is not a good (thing) what you have done continuously ...’).

Example where the adjective contains the intensifying suffix *wsy*.³⁶⁶

13. P. Anastasi II, 5, 3 (= *LEM*, 15, 2-3): panegyric of Merneptah.



ndm.wsy pzy.k šm r wꜣst

‘How pleasant is your journey to Thebes!’

40.5 Special case

In some rare instances, the second member of the sentence with adjectival predicate contains a construction that seems to be a circumstantial first present:

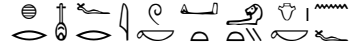
14. O. DM 554, 5-6 (fig. p. 87).



is nfr iw.i hr đd n.f

‘Is it a good thing that I talk to him?’ or ‘Is it good that I talk to him?’

15. P. Turin 1971, 13 (= *LRL*, 32, 4).



hr nfr iw.k (hr) đit hꜣty.k n.f

‘And it is good that you turn your heart to him.’

Based on the foregoing examples, one would have expected **is nfr pzy.i đd n.f* (example 14) and **hr nfr pzy.k đit hꜣty.k n.f* (example 15), whose second member contains a nominalised verbal sentence.

These two examples, where the circumstantial appears to be ‘nominalised,’ is reminiscent of cases where a circumstantial is used in place of a complement clause to take on the function of the direct object pronoun of an operator verb, see *supra* §32.4 and 5.

³⁶⁶ This morpheme, deriving from Middle Egyptian *wy sy* (*nfr.wy sy* ‘how beautiful is she!’) is mostly found in school texts, and especially in panegyrics. Other examples: P. Anastasi III, 7, 3 (= *LEM*, 28, 10) with *nfr.wsy*; P. Lansing, 2, 4 (= *LEM*, 101, 1) with *ꜥꜣ.wsy*.

41. Expressing possession

The notion of **ownership** (to belong to, to be property of)³⁶⁷ must be carefully distinguished from that of **possession**³⁶⁸ or the concept of ‘**having**’ something.³⁶⁹ This notion is expressed in two different ways depending on whether the possessor is represented by a name (or an interrogative pronoun) or by a personal pronoun.

41.1 The possessor is represented by a name (or an interrogative pronoun)

In this case, being X an object and A an individual, an institution, an object or a country, to say that X is a property of A, belongs to A, or “is A’s,” the syntagma derived from the nominal sentence with adjectival predicate will be used:³⁷⁰

(*itr*) X ... *ny-se* A: (as for) X ... it is A’s (it is a property of A)
ny-se A ... *p3* X: it is A’s ... the X

where *ny* is the genitival adjective playing the role of predicate,³⁷¹ while the subject *se* resumes (anaphora) or announces (cataphora) the object X. Thematisation (anterior or posterior) is required because the syntagma is grammaticalised, the genitival adjective having a nominal subject only in previous phases of the Egyptian language.³⁷² In Late Egyptian the construction is only used in the third person, without the pronoun’s spelling necessarily corresponding to the gender and number of X – hence the transliteration *se* in conformity with the pronunciation.³⁷³ The construction is negated by means of the negative morpheme *bn*.

The following are some of the attested spellings of *ny-se*:

1. Personal names: frequent use.

ny-se imn

‘Nesamun’ (= he belongs to Amun), X being the individual himself.

Example with anterior thematisation:

³⁶⁷ On Middle Egyptian see Gilula, *RdE* 20 (1968), 55-61.

³⁶⁸ Expressed by *m-di*; see Théodoridès, *RdE* 22 (1970) 139-154, and example 5 below.

³⁶⁹ Expressed through the existential predication: *wn m-di.f A* ‘he has an A.’ See *supra* §22.1, Černý-Groll, *LEG*, p. 392-395 and Benveniste, *Problèmes de linguistique générale* I, p. 196.

³⁷⁰ See Černý-Groll, *LEG*, p. 24-27 and 542-543.

³⁷¹ See Gardiner, *EG*, §114, 2; Lefebvre, *Grammaire*, §182.

³⁷² *ny X A* ‘X belongs to A,’ construction frequently employed in proper names: *n(y)-m3ʕt-rʕ* (Amenemhat III).

³⁷³ See §7.2.1.

2. O. Berlin P 11239, 3-4 (= *KRI* III, 545, 3-5).



ptr n3 hmtyw n sm iw r-dd ir nzy hmt ny-se sm bn ny-se p3 hr

‘See, the coppersmiths of the *sem*-priest have come saying: “As for the copper objects, they belong to the *sem*-priest, they do not belong to the (institution of the) Tomb.”’

Example with posterior thematisation:

3. P. Mayer A, 5, 14 (= *KRI* VI, 814, 6-7).

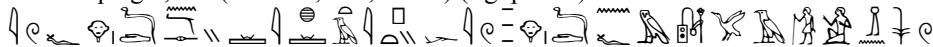


dd.w ny-se pr-3 ʿ.w.s. p3y rmt

‘They said: “He belongs to Pharaoh l.p.h., this man.”’

Example with the interrogative pronoun *ih* and posterior thematisation:

4. O. Leipzig 2, 5-6 (= *KRI* V, 467, 15-16) (fig. p. 238).

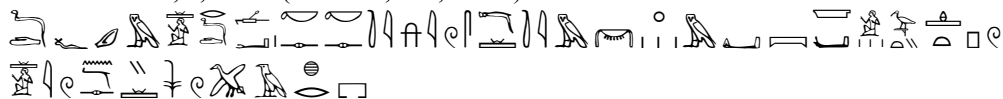


iw.f hr dd ny-se ih t3 ipt iw.w hr dd n.f m s3 p3-sr (i).in se

‘He said: “To whom (= to which institution) does it belong, the measure?” They answered him: “It is the scribe Paser who brought it.”’

Adverbial examples:

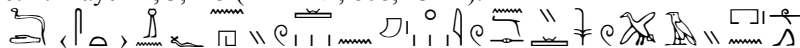
5. P. BM 10052, 3, 20-21 (= *KRI* VI, 774, 12-14).



dd.f sdm.i r-dd wʿ(t) kskst iw.s mh.ti m nbw m-di hry iryw-3 dhwtj-htp iw ny-se p3 hr

‘He said: “I have heard that a basket full of gold is in the possession of the chief porter Djehutyhotep, although it belongs to the Tomb.”³⁷⁴ Note the contrast between the expression of possession (*m-di*) and that of ownership (*ny-se*).

6. P. Mayer A, 3, 4-5 (= *KRI* VI, 808, 13-14).³⁷⁵



dd.<s> in.f nhzy n hmt iw ny-se p3y pr-n-st3

‘She said: “He carried off copper that belonged to this portable shrine.”’

³⁷⁴ On *iryw-3* see Černý, *Community*, p. 161; on *kskst*, see Janssen, *CP*, p. 151. Note also the first present with indefinite subject.

³⁷⁵ Also: P. Mayer A, 1, 12-3 (= *KRI* VI, 804, 15-16).

41.2 The possessor is represented by a personal pronoun

In this case a pronoun similar to the independent tonic pronoun,³⁷⁶ or to the traditional independent pronoun,³⁷⁷ functioning as adjectival predicate, is used.³⁷⁸ Being X an object, the minimal sentence is:

ink p3 X ‘the X is mine, the X belongs to me’ (my X)

X can be thematised, resulting in the following variants:

(*ir*) X ... *ink se* ‘(as for) X ... it is mine’

ink se ... *p3 X* ‘it belongs to me ... the X’

As in the previous cases, this is negated using the negative morpheme(s) *bn* ... (*itwn3*).

41.2.1 Examples with the new independent pronoun

7. Wenamun, 2, 24 (= *LES*, 69, 7-8).

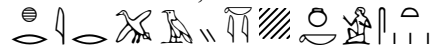


ntf p3 ym hr ntf p3 lbn nty tw.k (hr) dd ink se

‘The sea is his, and Lebanon – of which you never cease to say: “It is mine” – is his property.’

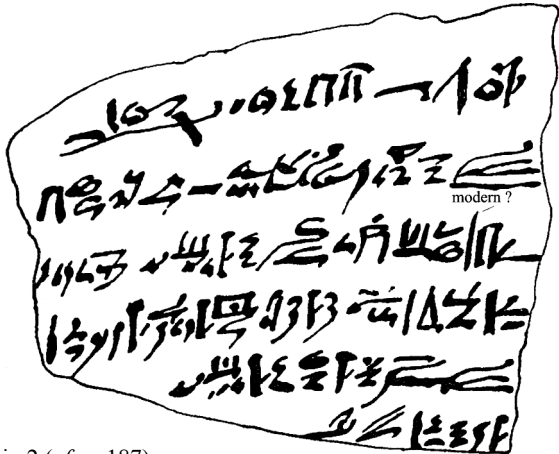
Examples with thematisation:

8. O. Turin 57472, v° 6-7.



hr ir p3y ky ink se

‘And, as for this other (one), it is mine.’



O. Leipzig 2 (*cf.* p. 187)

³⁷⁶ Because the paradigm uses *ntf*.

³⁷⁷ Use limited to the 2nd and 3rd persons: *twt* and *swt* for the two genders respectively, see §7.4.1.

³⁷⁸ Gilula, *RdE* 20 (1968), 55-58.

9. P. Turin 2021, 2, 2 (= *KRI* VI, 739, 7): feminine proper noun.



ink-se-ndm

‘Sweetness belongs to me’ (*lit.* ‘It is mine, the sweetness’).

Negative example:

10. O. Nash 2, v° 14 (= *KRI* IV, 319, 13-14): oath.



mtw.tw gm r-dd bn ink n3 hl

‘And if it is found that the picks are not mine ...’

Example where the syntagma is used in a circumstantial clause in place of a relative clause:

11. P. Strasburg 39, 8-9 (= Allam, *HOP*, pl. 105).



imi hn smsw iw ntk se m-s3.f

‘Dispatch after him a servant that belongs to you (*lit.* ‘Cause that a servant that is yours runs behind him’).

Example with *nty*:

12. P. Strasburg 39, v° 2-3 (= Allam, *HOP*, pl. 105).



nh.f p3y hnms nty ntk se

‘Ankhef, this friend of yours’ (*lit.* ‘who is yours’).

41.2.2 Examples with the traditional independent pronoun

13. P. Turin 2021, 3, 10 (= *KRI* VI, 741, 8).



swt 3hwt.f

‘His property is his.’

Example with anterior thematisation:

14. P. Anastasi V, 26, 7-27, 1 (= *LEM*, 71, 11-12).



y3 ir n3 nty hr h3st twt sn hr twt n3 nty hr kmt

‘Because, as for those who are in the desert, they belong to you (= ‘they are under your authority’), and to you (also) belong those who are in the Valley.’

Negative example with *iw* circumstantial:

15. P. Salt 124, 1, 17 (= *KRI* IV, 410, 4): concerning tombs that the vile Paneb entered.

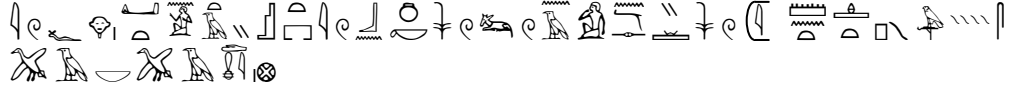


iw bn swt se

‘Although they did not belong to him.’

41.3 Examples using both modes of expressing possession³⁷⁹

16. O. Gardiner 103 A, 9-10 (= *KRI* V, 572, 1-2).



iw.f hr dit n.i tzy st iw bn ink se iwnz ny-se imn-htp c.w.s. p3 nb (n) p3 dmi

‘He gave me this building, although it is not mine (because) it belongs to Amenhotep l.p.h., the lord (of) the village.’

17. O. Gardiner 143, 5-6 (= *KRI* VII, 376, 9-11).



iri.f nh n nb c.w.s r-dd ir p3y ih i.di.i n rmj ist p3-r-htp s3 mn-n3 ink se n h'w.i bn ny-se p3 hm-ntr tpy

‘He swore an oath by the Lord l.p.h. saying: “As for the ox that I sold to the workman Prehotep son of Menna, it was my own, it did not belong to the high priest.”’

18. Wenamun, 1, 20-21 (= *LES*, 62, 16-63, 2).



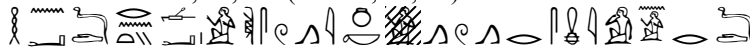
y3 ir p3 itzy i.tzy tw ntk se ny-se tzy.k br

‘Because, as for the thief who robbed you, he is yours, he belongs to your ship.’

41.4 Remark: the independent pronoun used as an attribute

(w) *šmsw ink* ‘one of my servants (a servant of mine)’³⁸⁰

19. P. Anastasi V, 27, 3-4 (= *LEM*, 71, 16).



hn c dd r-nty w šmsw ink iw r smi n.i r-dd

‘Another matter: one of my servants came to report to me saying ...’

³⁷⁹ Other examples: O. Nash 2, v° 1-3 (= *KRI* IV, 319, 1-3); Wenamun, 1, 14-17 (= *LES*, 62, 6-11).

³⁸⁰ Sentence in which *šmsw* is undefined. Not to be confused with *p3y.i šmsw* ‘my servant.’

20. O. Nash 1, 2-3 (= *KRI* IV, 315, 10-11).

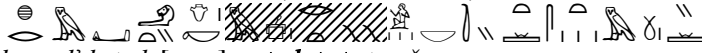


□|

ddt.n rmt̄ ist nb-nfr ir ink tms. ḥ̄ w̄ ḥl̄ ink m p̄zy. ḥ̄ pr

‘What the worker Nebnefer said: “As for me, (I) buried one of my picks in my house.”’

21. P. BN 197, II, 6- v° 1 (= *LRL*, 22, 14-15).



ḥr m dī ḥ̄zy.k [m-s̄] rmt̄ nb twt st m šs

‘And do not worry about any of your people, they are well.’

42. Cleft sentences

42.1 Introduction

The term **cleft sentence**³⁸¹ is normally used to describe Late Egyptian constructions employed to **rhematise** (that is, to shift to marked rheme³⁸²) any **noun phrase of a plain verbal sentence**,³⁸³ as well as the verb itself in its nominal form, the infinitive. The order is always **marked rheme-theme**.

42.1.1 What is a cleft sentence?

Modern grammars carefully distinguish two types of clefting.³⁸⁴

Given the plain sentence:

‘Paul likes tea’

a. It becomes, by **true clefting**:

‘it is Paul *who likes tea*’

or

‘it is tea *that Paul likes*’

following the extraction of ‘Paul’ (subject) or of ‘tea’ (direct object), and the relativisation of the rest of the sentence. In the resulting construction, which is a (**true**) **cleft sentence**, the relative is **not nominalised**, but simply embedded in the main clause. As a result, the relationship between the two clauses is one of **subordination**.

b. Through **pseudo-clefting** the same sentence becomes:

‘it is Paul, *the one who likes tea*’ = ‘*the one who likes tea*, is Paul’

or

‘it is tea, *what Paul likes*’ = ‘*what Paul likes*, is tea’

In this case, there is the **nominalisation** of the relative clause and the establishment of a predicative **relationship** between the extracted element ‘Paul’ or ‘tea’ on the one hand, and the **nominalised relative** on the other, that function as subject and predicate of a sentence constructed with the copula **be**. The resulting sentence is a pseudo-cleft sentence.

An excellent example of the method is provided by R. Chandler in his new *Trouble is my business*: ‘I said “so what” and “so what” is what I said.’

³⁸¹ Or ‘phrase coupée.’

³⁸² See *supra* §12.4.2. Note that it is a ‘functional’ definition.

³⁸³ Remember: a plain verbal sentence is one that verifies the statistical affinities subject-theme and predicate-rheme, and is devoid of any syntactic turn of phrase explicitly designating one of its components as theme or rheme.

³⁸⁴ For example: Quirck *et al.*, *A Comprehensive Grammar of the English Language*, London and New York, 1985 §18.25-30, p. 1383-1389; Huddleston, *English Grammar, an Outline*, Cambridge, 1988, p. 184-188, *Dictionnaire de linguistique*, ed. Larousse, Paris, 1973, p. 91 and 399.

It follows that in Late Egyptian, where the copula ‘be’ does not exist, the sentence corresponding to the pseudo-cleft sentence is the **two-member noun phrase**: (*p3*) *B p3 A*, where *A* is a nominalised, defined relative clause.³⁸⁵

42.1.2 Cleft sentences in Late Egyptian

Although in Middle Egyptian there is only one type of cleft sentence, we distinguish two in Late Egyptian, corresponding to the two types mentioned above.³⁸⁶

42.1.2.1 The (true) cleft sentence (type I)

This is the cleft sentence of classical Egyptian which, in modern guise, continues to be used to rhematise the **subject** of a plain verbal sentence in the **active** voice, or the **agent**, of the process.

The first member, which is always the **marked rheme**, contains a **defined noun**³⁸⁷ preceded by *m* (*in* in a few texts closer to the classical stage of the language), a **tonic independent pronoun** or the interrogative pronoun *nim*.³⁸⁸

The second member, corresponding to the **theme**, contains an **active participle**, periphrased or not, or a **prospective** most often periphrased. This second member always agrees in **gender**, **number** and **person** with the first. There are three possibilities:³⁸⁹

		<i>Late Egyptian</i>		<i>Classical Egyptian</i>
I	Past	<i>m p3 A i.stp (se)</i>	◀	<i>in A sdm (sw)</i> (perfective)
	or	<i>ntf i.stp (se)</i>	◀	<i>ntf sdm (sw)</i>
II	Aorist	<i>m p3 A i.iri stp.(f)</i>	◀	<i>in A sdm (sw)</i> (imperfective)
	or	<i>ntf i.iri stp.(f)</i>	◀	<i>ntf sdm (sw)</i>
III	Futur	<i>m p3 A i.iri.f stp.(f)</i>	◀	<i>in A sdm.f (sw)</i> (prospective)
	or	<i>ntf i.iri.f stp.(f)</i>	◀	<i>ntf sdm.f (sw)</i>
I	‘it is the A / he who chose it’			
II	‘it is the A / he who chooses it (habitually)’			
III	‘it is the A / he who will choose it’			

³⁸⁵ See *supra* §39.2.2.3.1.

³⁸⁶ On Late Egyptian, see Groll, *Non Verbal*; Černý-Groll, *LEG*, p. 525-541 and the fundamental article by Satzinger ‘Nominalsatz und Cleft Sentence im Neuägyptischen,’ in *Studies presented to H. J. Polotsky*, ed. Young, 1981, p 480-505.

³⁸⁷ Very rare exceptions are: P. BN 198, II, v° 1-2 (= *LRL* 68, 4-5); see below example 41.

³⁸⁸ *Nim* can be preceded, or not, by *m*, because the origin of *nim* = *in* + *m* had been forgotten.

³⁸⁹ Satzinger, *o.l.*, p. 492-493.

In this type of cleft sentence, the participle – which is never preceded by an article (or a demonstrative) – is **not nominalised**, but retains its **full verbal value**.³⁹⁰ Consequently, the second member is not the equivalent of a noun, but a true relative clause³⁹¹ – which means that the relationship between the two members is not predicative in nature (= between a subject and a predicate), but a relationship of subordination between two clauses (more precisely the embedding of a relative clause in a nominal form of the type *B Ø*). This construction, therefore, corresponds perfectly to the definition of **true cleft sentence** of modern grammars, as noted above.

This true cleft sentence is negated by means of the negative morpheme *bn*, exceptionally by *bn ... iwnz*. It can be preceded by the circumstantial *iw*,³⁹² and/or the past converter *wn*.³⁹³

Remarks

a. In Late Egyptian the presence of the article makes it impossible to confuse it with a nominal sentence (as could happen in Middle Egyptian). Compare the two examples below:

1. P. Turin 1978/208, v° 1-2 (= Allam, *HOP*, pl. 97).



yz bn inn i.iri hn.w m-dwn iwnz

‘For it is not us **who** usually **transport them** (= the goods).’ Given that it is not preceded by the article, the periphrased participle is not nominalised, thus, this is a true cleft sentence.

2. P. Anastasi V, 9, 6-7 (= *LEM*, 60, 9-10).



ntk³⁹⁴ pz i.iri shr n pz iwty mwt.f

‘It is you (you are) **the one who gives** guidance to one who has no mother.’ Nominal phrase, marked or not,³⁹⁵ where the nominalised participle is defined by the article.

▪ These two examples illustrate a key difference between the cleft sentence and the nominal sentence: while the unmarked correlate of the cleft sentence is a verbal sentence: **yz bn tw.n hr hn.w* ‘because we do not usually transport them’ (first present, see below §42.2.1.4, example 40), the unmarked correlate of a marked nominal sentence ‘It is you, the one ...’ is still a nominal sentence externally identical in Late Egyptian:³⁹⁶ ‘You are the one ...’

b. Although most of the verbs encountered are transitive, the true cleft sentence remains, as in the classical period and in the Third Intermediate Period, open to intransitive verbs or verbs used

³⁹⁰ View Doret *RdE* 40 (1989), p. 60: ‘The participle ... in the cleft sentence ... will have a near verbal value’ and *LingAeg* 1 (1991), 58: ‘to the nominal phrase ... is opposed the cleft sentence where the participle will have its full verbal value.’

³⁹¹ In the case of the prospective we are dealing with a ‘virtual relative clause.’

³⁹² It takes on a relative temporality.

³⁹³ Examples with *iw wn*: P. Mayer A, 4, 10 (= *KRI* VI, 811, 14); O. DM 663, 8-9 (= *KRI* III, 161, 3-4).

³⁹⁴ On the spelling of *ntk*, see *supra* p. 188, example 10 and n. 376.

³⁹⁵ Depending on whether the independent pronoun is tonic (marked) or atonic (unmarked).

³⁹⁶ See previous note.

intransitively.³⁹⁷

c. The object is most often expressed, exceptions occurring especially in the aorist.

d. There is a rare variant of this type where *m* is not found before *pʒ A*.³⁹⁸

In conclusion, it can be seen that the true cleft sentence only allows the rhematisation of the **subject** (or **agent**) of a verbal sentence in the **active** voice, which verb is a **perfective** (past), a **prospective** (future) or an **aorist** (habitual present).

42.1.2.2 The pseudo-cleft sentence (type II)

It serves to extend the possibility of rhematising a nominal element of a verbal sentence (broadly defined),³⁹⁹ in cases where the true cleft sentence cannot be used. Therefore, the pseudo-cleft sentence is additional to the true one, with which it is used in **complementary distribution**. In addition, the subject, the direct object and the verb itself – in its nominal form, the infinitive – can be rhematised in any voice and tense.

The first member, the **marked rheme**, includes either a **noun, defined or not**, a **tonic independent pronoun**, or the interrogative particle *ih*.

The second member, the **theme**, **agrees with the first in gender, number and person** and contains a nominalised, defined (either by a defined article or by a demonstrative⁴⁰⁰) relative clause containing a **passive participle**, a **relative form**, *nty* + **third future**, *nty* + **first present**, or (*i*).*wn* + **first present**.

Syntactically, this construction is, **to begin with**, nothing more than a **nominal sentence** which second member is a **nominalised relative clause**, **defined** by a definite article or a demonstrative, where *pw* is no longer present.⁴⁰¹ It thus complies with the definition that modern grammars give of the **pseudo-cleft sentence**, the term used in this book to designate it.

Afterwards, assuming, next to the true (and old) cleft sentence, the same function of rhematisation,⁴⁰² the pseudo (and new) cleft sentence was gradually **assimilated** while moving away from the nominal sentence.⁴⁰³ At the end of the process, it became, by **grammaticalisation**, a fixed expression, irreducible to the analysis, where, as in the true cleft sentence, the second member agrees with the first in gender, number and **person**.

In Coptic, where the copula is again expressed and the development completed, the two syntagmas are clearly differentiated:

ΟΥΜΕ ΤΕ†ΧΩ ΜΜΟC ‘it is the truth that I speak’

³⁹⁷ Examples in Middle Egyptian: CT VI, 401, o, with *iy*; *BIFAO* 85 (1985), 85, with *ʕq*; *CdE* 37 (1962), 253, with *spi*. Examples from the Third Intermediate Period: Urk. VI, 101, 4, with *mdw* and 145, 6, with *hwi r*. See Vernus, *RdE* 41 (1990), p. 188.

³⁹⁸ See Vernus, *RdE* 38 (1987), p. 175-181.

³⁹⁹ Including the various types of predicates of the first present.

⁴⁰⁰ *Pʒy*, *tʒy*, *nʒy* or *pʒw*. In the absence of any systematic study (see however Satzinger, *o.l.*, p. 501, n. 50), it is unclear what rules the use of different morphemes obeys. Note the parallel use of *pʒ* and *pʒy*: tablets Rogers and Mac Cullum, line 7.

⁴⁰¹ The non-expression of the copula *pw* in nominal sentences is one of the characteristics of Late Egyptian.

⁴⁰² Remember that the usual definition of cleft sentences in Late Egyptian is a functional definition, not a syntactical one.

⁴⁰³ That continues to fulfil its functions of classification and identification.

pseudo-cleft sentence where the copula is not present, but in which the article defining the relative clause and the resumptive pronoun agree with the first member (in this case a feminine).

ΟΥΜΕ ΠΕ ΠΕ†ΧΩ ΜΜΟϢ ‘what I say is true’

nominal phrase in which the article defining the relative clause and the resumptive pronoun agree with the copula, here expressed.⁴⁰⁴

The pseudo-cleft sentence in Late Egyptian is, therefore, an original form, distinct from the true cleft sentence, and which is different from the nominal sentence not only in its function, but also because of the complete agreement existing between the two members. Its origin and evolution can be observed during the nineteenth dynasty.

3. P. Cairo 58053, 3 (= *KRI* I, 322, 6-7): Seti I.

ih pw pzy.tn irt (m)-mitt

‘What is the meaning of your acting like (that)?’ (*lit.* ‘It is what, your acting so?’). ‘Simple’ nominal sentence with *pw*, where the second member, nominal by nature, is defined by the possessive.

4. O. Leipzig 16, 6-7 (= *HO*, 33, 2): date unknown.

ih pw n(z)⁴⁰⁵ nty tw.k hr iri.w

‘What are you going to do?’ (*lit.* ‘It is what, the (things) that you are going to do them?’). Nominal sentence where the second member is a nominalised relative clause, defined by an article, where *pw* is still expressed.

5. O. DM 126, 3 (= *KRI* III, 532, 3-4): Ramses II.

ih Ø n3 nty tw.tn hr dd.tw.w

‘What is it that you are going to relate?’ Following the disappearance of *pw*, the result is a pseudo-cleft sentence.

During this development, it can be observed that it is *pw* that disappears and, therefore, the morphemes *p3/t3/n3*, *p3y/t3y/n3y* or *p3w* – found in the pseudo-cleft sentences – are articles and demonstratives, not actualisations of *pw*.⁴⁰⁶

Remark. With regards to the translation, to comply with established practice and to distinguish them from nominal sentences, **both types of cleft sentences will be translated as true cleft sentences.**

The same evolution can be observed in the following examples:

⁴⁰⁴ See the excellent exposition by Satzinger, *o.l.*, p. 480-481.

⁴⁰⁵ For this spelling, see Wenamun, 2, 23.

⁴⁰⁶ A different view is found in Satzinger, *o.l.*, p. 481 and n. 14, p. 491.

6. P. Cairo 58054, 3 (= *KRI* I, 323, 4-5): Seti I.



is *dd pw n.k r(=i).mh tw im.sn p3 iri.n.i*

‘Is saying to you “Stop them then!” **what I have done?**’ Nominal sentence in which the second member is a nominalised relative clause and *pw* is expressed.

7. Theban tomb n. 19 (= *KRI* III, 395, 10-11): Ramses II.

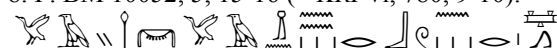


dd Ø p3 iri p3 ntr m3c.tw sdm-cš r-cms-s(w)-nht cš hq3-nht

‘It is saying: “The worker Ramsesnakht is right, Heqanakht is wrong” **what the god has done.**’ Pseudo-cleft sentence without *pw*.

Therefore, this type of nominal sentence and the pseudo-cleft sentence coexisted in Late Egyptian without being always possible, in the absence of *pw*, to distinguish them in writing – especially when pronouns are in the third person, or when the first member is a masculine singular. It is likely that the two sentences were distinguished only by suprasegmental features.⁴⁰⁷ The following example can be analysed either as a nominal or as a pseudo-cleft sentence:

8. P. BM 10052, 5, 15-16 (= *KRI* VI, 780, 9-10).



p3y hd p3 in.n r-bl

– ‘It is this silver, **what we took** out’ nominal sentence,

or

– ‘It is this silver here **that we took** out’ pseudo-cleft sentence.

Given that the first member is a masculine singular, it is impossible to distinguish between the two sentences. There follows that, each time there is **complete agreement** between the two members, the sentence will be taken, **somewhat arbitrarily**, as a pseudo-cleft sentence and will be translated accordingly,⁴⁰⁸ otherwise the sentence will be deemed to be a nominal sentence.

The following are some examples where this distinction is possible:

9. P. Griffith, 5-6 (= *LRL*, 12, 6-7).



ntk p3 nty ib.i r ptr.k

‘It is you that I desire to see’ (*lit.* ‘that my heart is towards seeing’).

⁴⁰⁷ It is the same in English where ‘It is the wine I prefer’ can indicate the vintage preferred by the speaker holding in his hand a bottle of Chateau Margaux (identification), or express its preference for the wine compared to beer, cider, etc. (restriction). In the first case, the construction is equivalent to a nominal sentence and in the second to a cleft sentence.

⁴⁰⁸ As a cleft sentence, except when the resulting translation is awkward or likely to cause confusion.

10. Cairo Stela JE 48876, 26 (= *KRI* VI, 20, 4).



ntk p3 nty wn phty im.k

‘It is you who has strength’ (*lit.* ‘It is you that there exists strength in you’).

These two indisputable pseudo-cleft sentences, in which both members agree **in person**,⁴⁰⁹ contrast with the next construction where the lack of agreement between the pronouns shows that it is a nominal sentence:

11. P. Anastasi V, 27, 5 (= *LEM*, 72, 2).



ink p3 gm.tn r s'hc.f m t3 st r-dr.s

‘It is me (= I am) the one whom you have found in order to penalise him among all taxpayers!’

In the following examples the distinction is made on the basis of whether there is number agreement, or not:

12. P. BM 10052, 3, 18 (= *KRI* VI, 774, 9-10).



10 n dbn n hd n s nb n3 dyt n p3 rmt hn' nzy.f iryw

‘**These are** (the) ten silver debens per person **that were** given to the man and his accomplices.’

Pseudo-cleft sentence in which the second member agrees in **number** with the first.⁴¹⁰

13. O. DM 554, 6 (fig. p. 87).



13 n rmw p3 iny (n).n

‘**It is** thirteen fish, **which** have been delivered to us.’ Nominal sentence in which the second member remains in the **singular**, while the first is in the **plural**.⁴¹¹

The following example, where the second member agrees with the first, which is feminine, is a construction exactly like the Coptic pseudo-cleft sentence cited above:

14. O. Gardiner 165, v° 4-5 (= *KRI* III, 549, 8-9).⁴¹²



t3 st w'ri t3 nty tw.k hr w[h3].s

‘It is only the she-ass that you claim.’

⁴⁰⁹ Compare with the true cleft sentence cited in example 19 below.

⁴¹⁰ See below the parallel examples 57, 63 and 64.

⁴¹¹ Parallel example: O. DM 576, 3-4: *bn it-m-it hsr 6 1/4 p3y in.f n.i* ‘It is not 6 1/4 bags of barley what he brought to me.’

⁴¹² See example 66 below.

The pseudo-cleft sentence is negated by the discontinuous negation *bn ... iwn3*, the latter term being inserted between the first and the second member;⁴¹³ it can also be preceded by the circumstantial *iw*.⁴¹⁴

42.2 Rhematisation the subject of the predicative plain verbal sentence⁴¹⁵

42.2.1 The sentence is in the active voice (type I or II)

42.2.1.1 Past (type I)

In this case it is always the true cleft sentence that is used:

- stp A (se)* ► *m A i.stp (se)* non-periphrased active participle
stp.i (se) ► *ink i.stp (se)* non-periphrased active participle

Examples with nominal subject:

15. P. Chester Beatty I, 17, 1 and v° G, 2, 5.

m nbwt i.wd se n.k

in nbwt i.wd se n.k

‘It is the Golden One who gave it to you.’ These parallel examples clearly show the equivalence of *m* (recent form) and *in* (ancient form).

The following example employs both morphemes, the older one preceding the recent one:

16. Horus and Seth, 6, 14 (= LES, 45, 11-12).

in m r(z).k i.dd se ds.k

‘It is your own mouth which has said it.’ Note the person agreement between the two members of this true cleft sentence.

17. O. Leipzig 2, v° 1 (= KRI v, 467, 16).

m sš p3-sr (i).in se

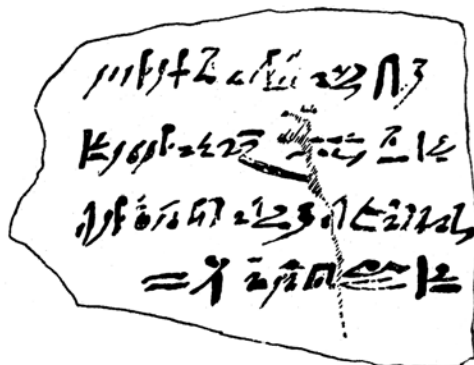
‘It is the scribe Paser who brought it (= the measure).’

Examples with the independent pronoun:

18. P. Mayer A, 4, 3 (= KRI VI, 811, 3).

dd.f ink. i.wn p3y hr

‘He said: “It is I who opened this tomb.”’



O. Leipzig 2, v° 1

⁴¹³ Whereas the same cannot happen in the case of the true cleft sentence (type I) where *iwn3*, if present, is never inserted between the two members.

⁴¹⁴ In this case it takes on a relative temporality.

⁴¹⁵ The rhematised term is, therefore, the agent of the process.

19. Cairo Stela JE 48876, 24 (= *KRI* VI, 20, 1-2).

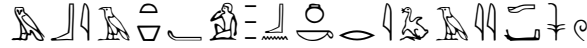


y3 ntk i.dd se m r(3).k ds.k

‘Because it is you who has said it with your own mouth.’ Note again the person agreement between the two members.

Negative example:

20. O. Nash 1, 8 (= *KRI* IV, 316, 2).

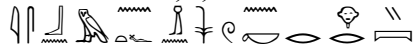


m-bi3 bn ink r(=i).it3y se

‘No! It is not I who stole it!’

Interro-negative example:

21. O. DM 357, a, 3.



is bn ntf (i).in se n.k r h3ry

‘Is it not him who brought it to you up there (= Deir el-Medina)?’

Circumstantial example:

22. O. A. Gardiner 90, 7 (= *KRI* V, 571, 1).



iw bn ink i.h3b [se]

‘While it is not I who sent it.’

Example with the thematisation of the direct object (= patient of the process):

23. P. Turin 1875, 3, 1 (= *KRI* V, 351, 6-7).



ir p3w iryt nb ntw i.iri se

‘As for all that has been done, it is they who have done it.’

Example with the interrogative particle *nim*:

24. O. DM 582, 5-6 (= *KRI* V, 575, 15) (fig. p. 242).

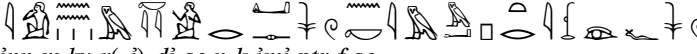


iw.i hr dd n.f m nim i.di n.k p3 3

‘I said to him: “Who (*lit.* ‘it is who, who’) gave you the donkey?”’

Example where the cleft sentence appears in the protasis of a correlative system introduced by *inn*:


25. P. Louvre E 27151, 8-9 (= *JEA* 64 (1978), pl. XIV A): concerning poor quality honey returned to the sender.


inn m ky r(=i).di se n.k imi ptr.f se

‘If it is someone else who supplied it to you, let him see it.’

The following are examples with intransitive verbs:

26. P. Orbiney, 4, 10 (= *LES*, 14, 1-2).


m nim (i).mdw m-di.t


‘Who (*lit.* ‘it is who, who’) has spoken (evil) with you?’

27. P. BM 10383, 1, 6 (= *KRI* VI, 834, 4).


m sš pr-ḥd swth-ms (i).wn m mr šhwt i.iy

‘It is the scribe of the Treasury Sethmose, the former (*lit.* ‘who had been’) Overseer of the Fields, who came.’

28. P. Anastasi V, 14, 1-2 (= *LEM*, 63, 8-9).


is bn ntj i.šm r-ḥst nš sšw tšty r pšy.s pr

‘Is it not you who walked before the scribes of the vizier to her house (= that of a third person)?’

Remark. Some syntagmas (very few), containing the active participle of a verb of motion, could be interpreted as pseudo-cleft sentences. However, given that the speaker in this case could use a true cleft sentence, it follows that these are simply nominal sentence in which *pw* is unexpressed.

The following is an example found in the protasis of a correlative system introduced by *hn*:

29. Wenamun, 1, 18 (= *LES*, 62, 13-14).



hn itšy iw ny-se pšy.i tš pš ḥšy r tšy.k br mtw.f tšy pšy.k ḥd wn iw.i (r) dbš.f n.k m pšy.i wdš

‘If it were a thief belonging to my country the one who went down into your ship and stole your silver, I would have reimbursed it to you from my treasury.’⁴¹⁶

42.2.1.2 Present (type II)

This time it is the pseudo-cleft sentence that is employed:

A ḥr stp.(f) ► A pš nty ḥr stp.(f)

⁴¹⁶ Another example: P. BM 10052, 13, 8 (= *KRI* VI, 795, 14-15).

*tw.i hr stp.(f) ► ink p3 nty hr stp.(f)*⁴¹⁷

This is an unmarked syntagma which expresses both the immediate and the habitual present. On the other hand, if it is a nuance of consuetude that one wants to convey, a marked form is used instead, the aorist.

Example containing a negative relative clause in which the adverbial predicate is implied:

30. *Giornale*, 12, 4-5 (= *KRI* VI, 569, 3-4).

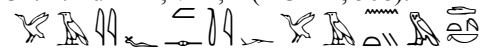


in-hr-h^cw s3 p3-nfr p3 nty bn sw (dy)

‘It is Inherkhau, son of Panefer, who is not here.’

Example where the predicate of the relative clause is a prepositional phrase:

31. P. Turin A, v^o 4, 1 (= *CLEM*, 508).



p3y.f gsti p3 nty m drt.k

‘It is his palette that is in your hand.’

Examples with a predicate of the form *hr* + infinitive:

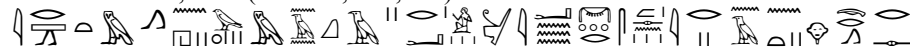
32. P. Orbiney, 6, 5 (= *LES*, 15, 12-13).



p3y.i nb nfr ntk⁴¹⁸ p3 nty hr wp p3 ‘d3 r ‘p3> m3^ctw

‘Oh my good lord, it is you who judges between the guilty and (the) just!’ Habitual present.

33. Kuban Stela, 9-10 (= *KRI* II, 355, 4-5).



ir sm nhy m n3 n q3ry n i^c nwb r.s gs.sn ury n3 nty hr spr r.s

‘If some of the squads of gold washers go there, it is (only) half of them who reach there.’

Habitual present.

34. Doomed Prince, 4, 8 (= *LES*, 2, 4-5).



ih p3 nty hr sm m-s3 p3 s ‘3 nty m iyt hr t3 mitt

‘What is that walking behind the older man who is coming down the road?’ Immediate present.

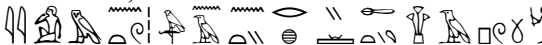
Examples where the predicate is a pseudo-participle:

⁴¹⁷ The same transformation takes place for other types of predicate of the first present. In the negative form the subject is resumed in the relative clause, see example 30.

⁴¹⁸ On this spelling see *supra* §39.2.1.1, example 10.

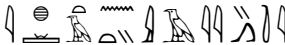
35. Graffito 1396, 3.

‘If (I) have come, it is to see the mountains (of the West) and to denounce the evil to Amun, Mut and Khonsu,


*y3 ntw n3 nty rh ht h3p*⁴¹⁹

because they are the ones who know the true nature’ (*lit.* ‘the secret interior’).

36. Horus and Seth, 9, 11 (= *LES*, 50, 2). Isis turned herself into a headless statue (*rpyt*) and Pre asks Thoth:


ih t3 nty iy.ti

‘Who is the one that has arrived?’ (*lit.* ‘It is who that has come (and who is there)?’). In this example, the pseudo-participle has a resultative value (unmarked) – Isis is there at the time the words are uttered – while in the example 27 the participle expresses a punctual past event (marked) unrelated to the moment of the enunciation.

42.2.1.3 Imperfect (type II)

This temporal nuance is obtained by transposing the previous sentence into the past, *nty* having been replaced by (*i*).*wn*, the participle of the auxiliary *wnn*.

wn A hr stp.(f) ► *A p3 (i).wn hr stp.(f)*
wn.i hr stp.(f) ► *ink p3 (i).wn hr stp.(f)*⁴²⁰

Example where the predicate of the relative clause includes an adverb and a pseudo-participle:

37. P. Mayer A, 1, 4 (= *KRI* VI, 803, 16-804, 1).


ntf p3 wn im h3c irm n3 it3w

‘It is him who was over there attacking the thieves.’

Example where the predicate of the relative clause is a prepositional phrase:

38. P. BM 10052, 14, 18 (= *KRI* VI, 799, 2-3).


ih m stp t3 wn hr nhbt.w

‘What kind of burden was (*lit.* ‘it is what as load that was’) on their neck?’

Example with a predicate of the form *hr* + infinitive:

⁴¹⁹ Other examples: *inn nwi.tw nbw ntw n3 nty rh* ‘If one grabbed gold, it is they who know,’ P. Mayer A, 2, 15 (= *KRI* VI, 807, 11 -12); *t3ty p3 nty rh* ‘It is the vizier who knows,’ O. Nash 1, v° 14-15 (= *KRI* IV, 317, 12).

⁴²⁰ The transformation is identical for other types of predicate of the first present.

39. Mês, N 11-12 (= *KRI* III, 427, 11-12): concerning a plot of land.



iw hry ihz hwy sz pz-r^c-hup pz wn hr skz.s dr hzw N di nh⁴²¹

‘While it was the Overseer of the Stables Huy, son of Prehotep, who cultivated it since the time of (king) N given life.’

42.2.1.4 Aorist (Type I)

It is a marked construction, specifying the repetition of the process or the general present, which derives from a Middle Egyptian cleft sentence containing an imperfective active participle. In Late Egyptian this participle is almost always periphrased:⁴²²

A hr stp.(f) ▶ m A i.iri stp.(f)
tw.i hr stp.(f) ▶ ink i.iri stp.(f)

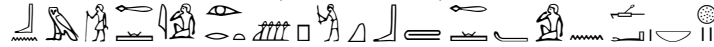
40. P. Turin 1978/208, v^o 1-2 (= Allam, *HOP*, pl. 97).



y3 bn inn i.iri hn.w m-dwn iwn3

‘For it is not us who usually transport them (the goods).’ Consuetudinal present.

41. P. BN 198, II, v^o 1-2 (= *LRL*, 68, 4-5).



bn m sr 3z i.iri šsp qb^c n w^c nb sp-sn

‘This is not a great judge that accepts taunts from everyone!’⁴²³ General present.

This example contains, quite exceptionally, an undefined subject. Therefore, what has been asserted⁴²⁴ is valid for **the class** of great magistrates, the latter being designated by any of its components.⁴²⁵

Circumstantial examples:

42. P. BM 10403, 3, 25-27 (= *KRI* VI, 833, 1-3).



dd.tw n.s wn.t m hnm m-di w^b it3w t3t3-šri iw ntj i.iri wn n pz nty m^v 3q ntj i.iri htm n pz nty pr

‘They said to her: “You were a servant to the wab priest Tatisheri, (this) thief, so then it is you who opened to the one who came in, and you who closed behind the one that exited.”’ Relative

⁴²¹ The passage is much damaged.

⁴²² With non-periphrased participles: P. Chester Beatty IV, v^o 3, 11-12; P. Orbiney, I, 3 (= *LES*, 9, 15-16); and probably P. Anastasi V, 26, 1 (= *LEM*, 71, 3-4). Except for the cleft sentence: P. Anastasi V, 9, 6-7 (= *LEM*, 60, 9-10). In any case, it is the sense that leads to see a non-periphrased imperfective participle, see Winand, *Morphology*, p. 360.

⁴²³ See Groll, *RdE* 26 (1974), 172.

⁴²⁴ ‘That no great magistrate would accept taunts from anyone,’ not that ‘It is not a great magistrate the one who accepts taunts from anyone!’ – which would be **bn sr 3z i.iri šsp qb^c n w^c nb sp-sn*.

⁴²⁵ If in English one can say, *a duck is a bird*, it is because this is true of **all** ducks.

present expressing habitual activity.

43. P. Mayer A, 4, 10 (= *KRI* vi, 811, 14-15).



nby iw.f-n-mwt dbn 2 iw wn ntf i.iri wdḥ n.n mtw.f pš m pš ʿqz irm.n ʿn

‘The goldsmith Iuefenmut: 2 debens because it was he who smelted for us and shared in equal parts with us.’ Note the presence of both the converters *iw* and *wn*.

Example with an intransitive verb:

44. P. Anastasi VI, 85-86 (= *LEM*, 78, 11).



iw m p3 ḥ3ty-ʿ n niwt i.iri 3b im.i

‘While it is the major of the City who picks on me.’ Habitual present.

42.2.1.5 Future (type I)

iw.i r stp.(f) or stp.i (se) ► ink i.iri.i stp.(f)
iri A r stp.(f) or stp A (se) ► m A i.iri.f stp.(f)

The non-independent prospective appearing in the second member is often periphrased. Note that it is always the true cleft sentence (type I) that is employed to rhematise the subject of a future verbal sentence. Given that *ink p3 nty iw.i r stp.(f)* is apparently unattested, it is the old (and true) cleft sentence that expresses the modal future and the objective future.⁴²⁶ There are many examples in the second person, where the construction serves to formulate a polite order.

45. P. BN 199, III, 6-7 (= *LRL*, 70, 14-15).



ntk i.ptr p3 i3//// ḥr ntk i.iri.k ʿn smi n t3ty ḥr.w

‘It is you who has monitored the *////*⁴²⁷ and it is you who will report to the vizier about it.’ Note the use of the two forms of the true cleft sentence (non-periphrastic participle first, then a prospective) to express first the past and then the future.

46. P. BM 10375, 26-27 (= *LRL*, 46, 11).⁴²⁸



ḥr ntk i.iri.k swḏ.w n p3y.k nb

‘And it is you who will hand them over to your lord.’

⁴²⁶ See Vernus, *Future*, p. 55-60; his conclusions extend also to Late Egyptian.

⁴²⁷ The surviving determinative shows that the word in the lacuna referred to grain.

⁴²⁸ Another example: Graffito 1396, 5: *ntk i.iri.k db3 n.w ʿn* ‘It is you who will pay them too.’

47. P. Geneva D 407, v° 6 (= *LRL*, 15, 9).

ntk i.iri.k h3b n.n c.k

‘It is you who will send us your news.’

48. P. Bologna 1086, 6 (= *KRI* IV, 79, 8).

m p3-r' pth i.iri.w nd-hrt.k

‘It is Pre and Ptah who will greet you.’

49. P. Turin 2021, 3, 11-12 (= *KRI* VI, 741, 10-11).⁴²⁹

[nim i].iri.f wsf p3 iri.f

‘[Who] will undo what he has done?’

Examples where the prospective is not periphrased:⁴³⁰

50. P. Anastasi I, 14, 1-2.

‘I am going to reveal you a decision of your master l.p.h.:

ntk p3y.f sš nsw (i).sb.k hry mnw wrw n hr nb t3wy

it is you, his royal scribe, who shall transport great monuments for Horus Lord of the Two Lands.’

51. Graffito of regnal year 50 of Ramses II, 4 (= *KRI* III, 437, 13-14).

inn n3 sšw n pth p3y.n it i.dd.n se n.f

‘It is us, the scribes of Ptah, our father, who will say it to him.’

42.2.2 The sentence is in the passive voice (type II)⁴³¹

The second member of the pseudo-cleft sentence contains a **passive participle**. The construction is only attested in the **past** tense.

A stp or stp. Ø A ► A p3 stpyt

52. Mès, N 10 (= *KRI* III, 427, 4-5).

dnyt n c'd3 t3 iryt r.i

‘It is a false register that has been fabricated against me!’

⁴²⁹ Example where the interrogative pronoun was restored with a high probability.

⁴³⁰ Other examples: Qadesh Poem, §330 (= *KRI* II, 97, 13), with *nim*, P. Anastasi V, 19, 2 (= *LEM*, 66, 9), with *ink*.

⁴³¹ The term rhematised is now the patient of the process.

53. P. Anastasi IV, 7, 11 (= *LEM*, 42, 12-13): concerning a ship.



nhy n s'iw n šnty nš dyt n.f m hryt

‘They are (only) acacia planks that he has put as gunwales.’

54. P. ESP, B, 13 (= *KRI* VI, 519, 2-3).



w^c dbn w^cty n msdmt pšw gmyt im.f

‘It is one and only one deben of galena that was found therein.’

55. P. BM 10052, 3, 18 (= *KRI* VI, 774, 9-10).



10 n dbn n hq̄ n s nb nš dy n pš rmt̄ hn^c nšy.f iryw

‘These are 10 silver debens each that have been given to the man and his accomplices.’

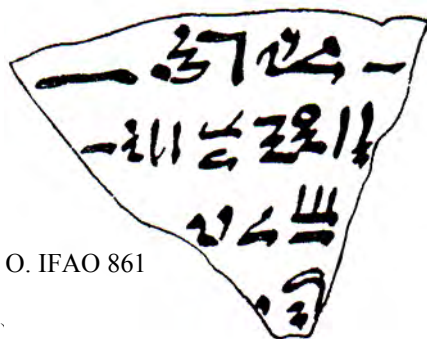
Interrogative examples:

56. P. Anastasi VIII, 1, 11-12 (= *KRI* III, 500, 14).



ih̄i pšw iryt n.sn

‘What has been done with it?’



O. IFAO 861

57. O. IFAO 861 (= *BIFAO* 72 (1972), 53 and pl. XVII)



(i)n pš 5 dbn n hmt nš dyt n p(š)-n-pš-h^cpy

‘Are the five copper debens that have been given to Penpahapy?’

42.3 Rhematisation of the direct object of the predicative plain sentence (type II)⁴³²

It is always the pseudo-cleft sentence that is employed for this purpose.

42.3.1 Past

The second member of the pseudo-cleft sentence contains a non-periphrased **relative form**, while the object, identical to the antecedent, is not resumed by a resumptive pronoun – in accordance with the rule studied above §28.1:

stp.i (se) ▶ ntf pš stp.i

stp.i A ▶ A pš stp.i


Example with pronominal object:

⁴³² The term rhematised here is also the patient of the process.

42.3.2 Present

tw.i hr stp.f ► *ntf p3 nty tw.i hr stp.f*
tw.i hr stp A ► *A p3 nty tw.i hr stp.f*⁴³⁵

65. P. BN 198, I, 14 (= *LRL*, 66, 13).


ntk p3 nty ib.w r ptr.k

‘It is you whom they wish to see.’ Note the person agreement already pointed out in example 9 and 10 above.⁴³⁶

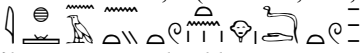
66. O. Gardiner 165, v° 4-5 (= *KRI* III, 549, 8-9).


t3 3t w3ti t3 nty tw.k hr w[h3].s

‘It is only the she-ass that you claim.’

Example with the interrogative particle *ih*:

67. O. DM 126, 3 (= *KRI* III, 532, 3-4).



ih n3 nty tw.tn hr dd.tw.w

‘What is it that you are going to relate?’

42.3.3 Future

iw.i r stp.f ► *ntf p3 nty iw.i r stp.f*

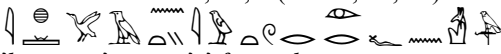
68. P. Mayer A, 9, 15-16 (= *KRI* VI, 821, 8-9).


ir p3 pry nb m r(3).i m t3 h3t ntf p3 nty iw.i (r) dd.tw.f

‘As for all that came out of my mouth from the beginning, that is what I will say (and nothing else).’ In this example, the direct object of the verb (the patient of the process) is first thematised and then rhematised.

Example with the interrogative particle *ih*:

69. Horus and Seth, 16, 3 (= *LES*, 59, 15).


ih p3 nty iw.tw r iri.f n swth

‘What will be done to Seth?’

⁴³⁵ See p. 220, n. 464.

⁴³⁶ Also P. Leiden I 369, 6 (= *LRL*, 1, 8-9), P. Griffith, 5-6 and 12 (= *LRL*, 12, 6-7 and 12), P. Turin 1974 + 1945 v° 4 (= *LRL*, 40 3), and P. Bologna 1094, 7, 5 (= *LEM*, 7, 4-5).

42.4 Rhematisation of the verb of the predicative plain sentence (type II)

The pseudo-cleft sentence also allows one to rhematise the verb itself in its nominal form, the **infinitive**.⁴³⁷

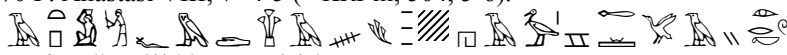
The latter, never defined and negated by *tm*, is found in the first member where it is always accompanied by a direct object and a dative, when they are present – which shows that the rhematisation does not affect the verb alone, but **the entire verbal sentence**.⁴³⁸ It is periphrased in the second member by a defined relative clause always containing the auxiliary *iri*. The resulting minimal sentence is:

stp p3 i.iri.f ‘it is choosing what he did’
(*lit.* ‘It is **an act of choosing** that he did.’)

42.4.1 Past⁴³⁹

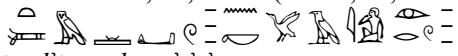
If the agent of the process is expressed, the second member of the pseudo-cleft sentence contains a relative form, or, otherwise, a passive participle.

70 P. Anastasi VIII, v° 4-5 (= *KRI* III, 504, 5-6).



stp.f m dh3 [///]hb ʿ3 p3y iri.k
‘It is the loading of straw and large /// that you have done.’

Negative examples:

71 P. BN 197, VI, v° 4-5 (= *LRL*, 64, 14-15).



tm dit.w n.k p3 i.iri.w
‘It is not giving them to you that they have done.’

72. P. Anastasi IV, 7, 10-11 (= *LEM*, 42, 12).


tm dit n.f hrit q3y p3 iryt
‘It is not putting on it high gunwales what has been done.’

42.4.2 Imperfect

73. Wenamun, 2, 11-12 (= *LES*, 68, 6-7).


*nn(=in) f3y mlk p3 wn.w (hr) iri.f n p3y.i it*⁴⁴⁰
‘Was it offering royal gifts to my father what they did?’

⁴³⁷ See Shisha-Halevy, *Or* 58 (1989), 33-35, and Quack, *RdE* 42 (1991), 201-206, for the examples and the origin of the construction. See also examples 6 and 7 above.

⁴³⁸ Or **predicate construction**. See *Dictionnaire de linguistique*, ed. Larousse, p. 389 and 507.

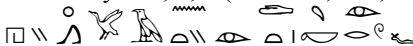
⁴³⁹ Other examples: P. BM 10052, 10, 8-9 (= *KRI* VI, 789, 9-10); P. Geneva D 407, v° 4 (= *LRL*, 15, 6-7) Tablets Mac Cullum and Rogers, 7; *KRI* III, 395, 10 (cited above, example 7); P. Anastasi IX, 7-8 cited incorrectly by Quack, *o.c.*, 202, after Satzinger, *o.c.*, 490, that is equally incorrect, and is to be dismissed – the relative form being undefined.

⁴⁴⁰ Exceptionally, in this example the dative was left out after the second member.

42.4.3 Future

Example with nominal subject.⁴⁴¹

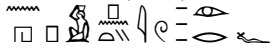
74. P. Mayer A, 8, 5 (= *KRI* VI, 817, 14-15).


hꜣy pꜣ nty iri drt.k (r) iri.f

‘It is descend that your hand is going to do!’

Example with suffixal subject:


75. *URK* VI, 137, 8: ritual to repel the Aggressive.⁴⁴²


nhp p(ꜣ) nty iw.w (r) iri.f

‘It is lamenting that they will have to do!’⁴⁴³

Example where the syntagma is found in an adverbial clause playing the role of a complement clause subject of *hpr*:⁴⁴⁴

76. Tablet Neskhnos, 18-19 (= *JEA* 41 (1955), 102, 2).⁴⁴⁵


iw.i (r) dit hpr iw whꜣ n.f mdt nb(t) nfrt pꜣ nty iw.s (r) iri.f

‘I will ensure that (*lit.* ‘will cause to happen’) it is claim for him all sorts of benefits (*lit.* ‘all good things’) what she will have to do!’

42.5 Special cases

Sometimes, it is possible to encounter constructions, apparently, having all the **syntactical** characteristics of a pseudo-cleft sentence: their first member contains an independent pronoun or a noun, and, the second, a defined, nominalised relative clause, where the preposition *m* (written *im*) is found, usually followed by a suffix,⁴⁴⁶ resuming the pronoun or noun of the first member.

Is this a cleft sentence? Remember that the general definition of a Late Egyptian cleft sentence given above is a **functional** definition: a construction that allows for the rhematisation of a nominal element of a verbal sentence (in the broad sense, including the predication of location and existence). If the construction actually performs the function of rhematisation, it is a cleft sentence – or a pseudo-cleft sentence, as the case may be – otherwise it will be a nominal sentence.

The examples encountered are divided into two groups depending on whether the relative clause of the second member contains a verb or not, in other words, if it is or not strictly verbal.

⁴⁴¹ Found in a complement clause introduced by *r-dd*.

⁴⁴² On this text and its dating see Vernus, *RdE* 41 (1990), 206-207.

⁴⁴³ Translation by Vernus, *o.c.*, 189 example 137.

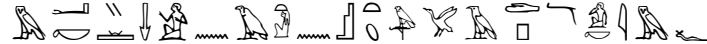
⁴⁴⁴ Example of an adverbial clause playing the role of a complement clause object of *hpr*: *Doomed Prince* 4, 5 (= *LES*, 1, 9).

⁴⁴⁵ Another example: Tablet Neskhnos, 18 (= *JEA* 41 (1955), 101, 24-102, 1).

⁴⁴⁶ Sometimes implied, as may be the case with *im*.

42.5.1 The relative clause of the second member is strictly verbal

77. Horus and Seth, 9, 7 (= *LES*, 49, 10-11): Isis speaks to the iron of her harpoon.



mk sn n mwt n 3st p3 dp.k im.f

‘See, it is the maternal brother of Isis (= Seth), the one into which you bit’ (*lit.* ‘tasted’).

This is a nominal sentence simply identifying the one that was harpooned. Take the corresponding verbal phrase: **dp.k m sn n mwt n 3st* – it can be seen that it would have been possible for the speaker to use a second tense to rank-shift to marked rheme the prepositional phrase containing the noun *sn n mwt n 3st*: **i.iri.k dp m sn n mwt n 3st* ‘it is into the maternal brother of Isis (and into no-one else) that you have bitten.’

The same is true of the following example:

78. P. BM 10052, 5, 20 (= *KRI* VI, 781, 1-2).



iw wcf f3i sri n inr p3 di.n n.w im.f iw bn p3 inr c3 i.p3.n im.f iwn3

‘But it was a small stone weight the one with which we measured their share (*lit.* ‘given’),⁴⁴⁷ it was not the big stone by means of which we shared.’

Nominal sentence indicating the inclusion of a given weight in the class of ‘small stone weights.’ Here again, the speaker had the opportunity to use a second tense: **iw i.iri.n dit nw n.w m wcf f3i sri n inr ...* ‘but it is with a small weight of stone that we have measured their share,’ rhematising in this way also the adverbial phrase *m wcf f3i sri n inr*.

In addition, the second part of the sentence *iw bn p3 inr c3 i.p3.n im.f iwn3* is not a cleft sentence⁴⁴⁸ – because the article does not appear before the relative form – but a nominal sentence of the type *bn B Ø iwn3* preceded by the circumstantial *iw*, functioning as a relative clause qualifying the indefinite antecedent *wcf f3i sri n inr*.

42.5.2 The relative clause of the second member is non verbal

When the relative clause contains a location predication it works differently. If Middle Egyptian possessed the means to rhematise the adverbial phrase of such a predication, it was through the ‘emphatic’ converter *wnn*,⁴⁴⁹ which is hardly ever used with this function in Late Egyptian.⁴⁵⁰ It appears that the latter stage of the language no longer had the means to rhematise the adverbial element of a location predication.⁴⁵¹ Thus, it can be assumed that the pseudo-cleft sentence, through the rhematisation of the substantive in the adverbial phrase, would be a way to make up

⁴⁴⁷ Translation of a two-member nominal sentence referring to the inclusion into a class. It was preferred to ‘But it is a small stone weight with which we measured their share,’ which is a nominal sentence of the type *B Ø* expressing identity (**iw wcf f3y sri n inr iw di.n n.w im.f*).

⁴⁴⁸ For a different analysis see Satzinger, *o.l.*, example 22, p. 490.

⁴⁴⁹ See Vernus, *Future*, p. 45-51; *LingAeg* 1 (1991), 340.

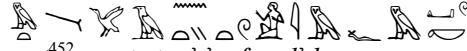
⁴⁵⁰ Very rare examples: P. Anastasi I, 10, 2; P. Sallier I, 7, 1 (2 times) and 7, 8 – where *wnn* clearly serves as ‘peg’ providing an additional accentual unit to a text drafted in ‘heptametrical couplets’ (see Mathieu, *RdE* 39 (1988), 63-82).

⁴⁵¹ For an exceptional case using the auxiliary *iri*, see Winand, *Morphologie*, p. 286-287.

for this.

In other words, if one cannot say ‘*it is in the house that I am,*’ one will say ‘*it is the house, the place in which I am.*’

79. P. Turin A, v^o 4, 10 (= *CLEM*, 510).



*mwt*⁴⁵² p₃ nty tw.i im.f m-di.k

‘It is Death in which I find (myself) (*lit.* ‘I am’) because of you.’

80. Wenamun, 2, 23 (= *LES*, 69, 5-6).



qz bn ms^c swgz iwnz n(s) nty tw.i im.w

‘It is false! These are not foolish expeditions that I undertake! (*lit.* ‘in which I am’).’

81. P. BM 10052, 8, 5 (= *KRI* VI, 785, 16),

‘He said: “Leave me be about the big tombs,⁴⁵³ if I have to be executed because of the tombs of Imiotru,



ntw n₃ wn.i im

(because) they are the ones (and not the first) in which I was!’” The rhematisation here appears very probable: the thief requests not to be questioned, and therefore not tortured, about the tombs of the Theban necropolis, because he has already been sentenced to death for theft in the tombs of Gebelein – the only ones where he has entered.

Finally, the relative clause may contain an existential predication. The pseudo-cleft sentence seems to be the only possible mode of rhematisation. In the following example the person agreement confirms it:

82. Cairo Stela, JE 48876, 26 (= *KRI* VI, 20, 4): hymn to Osiris.



ntk p₃ nty wn phty im.k

‘It is you (and nobody else) who has strength⁴⁵⁴ (*lit.* ‘that there exists strength in you’).’

42.6 Conclusion

In Late Egyptian the general term **cleft sentence** – designating constructions that allow for the rhematisation of a substantival term after a predicative plain verbal sentence – covers two different syntactic realities in complementary distribution: the true cleft sentence, successor of the classic cleft sentence, and the pseudo-cleft sentence, of recent formation, that remained close to the nominal sentence from which it derived.

Let us add some **syntactic** criteria learnt from this chapter, which, in some cases, allow one to distinguish between nominal and cleft sentences:

⁴⁵² Masculine word in Egyptian (Lefebvre, *Grammaire*, §115, b).

⁴⁵³ *Lit.* ‘Away from me, away from my body the great tombs.’

⁴⁵⁴ The same sentence, non-rhematised, is also attested: *m-dd wn phty ʿz im.k* ‘Saying: “you have great strength,”’ P. Orbiney, 3, 5 (= *LES*, 12, 8).

a. A sentence whose second member contains a **nominalised, defined**⁴⁵⁵ relative clause, formed with the **active participle**, or the non-independent **prospective** (periphrased or not) of a **transitive** or **intransitive** verb, is a **nominal sentence** – because the speaker, in this case, had the choice of using a true cleft sentence:

- *nk p3 i.iri shr n p3 iwty mwt.f* ‘You are / It is you the one who gives guidance to one who has no mother’ (see above, example 2);
- *hn itzy iw ny-sw p3y.i t3 p3 h3y r t3y.k br mtw.f t3y p3y.k hd wn iw.i (r) db3.f n.k m p3y.i wd3* ‘If it were a thief belonging to my country the one who went down into your ship and stole your silver, I would have reimbursed it to you from my treasury’ (see above, example 29).

b. A sentence whose second member contains a **nominalised, defined** relative clause, formed with a **passive** participle, a **relative form**, **nty + third future**, **nty + first present**, or **(i).wn + first present**, and **does not agree** (in gender, number, or person) with the first member, is a nominal sentence:

- *ink p3 gm.tn r s'hc.f m t3 st r-dr.s* ‘It is **me** / **I** am the one whom you have found in order to penalise **him** among all taxpayers!’ (see above, example 11);
- *l3 n rmw p3 iny n.n* ‘It is thirteen fish, **which** have been delivered to us’ (see above, example 13).

c. A sentence whose second member contains a relative clause constructed with the same grammatical forms as in **b**, but is **undefined**,⁴⁵⁶ is a **nominal sentence** where the relative clause plays the role of **attribute**. This noun phrase can also function as a one-member nominal sentence (**B Ø**):

- *bn p3 inr 3 i.pš.n im.f iwn3* ‘It is not the big stone by means of which we shared’ (see above, example 78): negative nominal sentence.

d. A sentence whose first member is **undefined**, and the second member is an **adverbial clause**, is not a cleft sentence, but a **one-member nominal sentence (B Ø)**, in which the adverbial clause functions as relative attribute of the undefined antecedent A.⁴⁵⁷

- *80 n rnpt r t3y iw.n m t3 qnbt* ‘It is eighty years (*lit.* ‘It is eighty years until this’) that we are in the court,’ Horus and Seth, 13, 12 (= *LES*, 55, 13-14).⁴⁵⁸

⁴⁵⁵ By an article, a demonstrative, a possessive, etc.

⁴⁵⁶ By an article, a demonstrative, a possessive, etc.

⁴⁵⁷ Contrary to the interpretation of Černý-Groll, *LEG* (2nd ed.), p. 536 bottom (‘Ø A + a virtual relative clause.’ Note that the numbering of the paragraph is incorrect).

⁴⁵⁸ Other examples: Horus and Seth, 14, 1 (= *LES*, 55, 15); P. BN 198, I, 15 (= *LRL*, 66, 13-14); O. IFAO 694 (= *BIFAO* 41 (1941), p. 18). These last two examples are cited as cleft sentences by Černý-Groll, *o.c.*, example 804 and 1586.

Handwritten text in a South Indian script, likely Grantha or Tamil, covering the majority of the page. The text is densely packed and appears to be a continuous passage or a list of items.

APPENDIX ONE

INTERROGATIVE SYNTAGMAS

43. Appendix one: interrogative syntagmas

43.1 Introduction

In Late Egyptian an interrogative syntagma generally includes a specific morpheme, which can be a particle, a pronoun or an adverb. However, besides the clearly identified constructions, it is possible to encounter sentences devoid of interrogative morphemes, thus it is only from the context that they can be interpreted as questions. These statements must have been uttered with a particular intonation.





43.2 Syntagmas introduced by an interrogative particle

A declarative sentence (affirmative or negative) becomes interrogative when preceded by one of the interrogative particles *in*, *is(t)*, *is bn*.

43.2.1 Syntagmas introduced by *in*

Interrogative particle *par excellence*, *in* can be placed before most independent forms, verbal or nominal. Questions thus obtained are true questions, likely to receive either an affirmative or a negative response.

The spellings, sometimes confusing, are the following:

 (frequent),  (quite rare),  (rare⁴⁵⁹),  (found exceptionally).

43.2.1.1 *in* + *sdm.f*

Without knowing the context, it is not always possible to choose between a *sdm.f* perfective, referring to a past event, or a prospective *sdm.f* expressing the modal future:

1. O. Clère (= *BIFAO* 72 (1972), 50 and pl. XV).



in *h3b. i3 hr. w n(=m) m3't*

- ‘Have I really written about them?’ (*lit.* ‘Have I written about them, in truth?’): Perfective;
- ‘Must I really write about them?’ Prospective.

2. O. Brussels E 317 (= *BIFAO* 72 (1972), 52 and pl. XVI).



in *it3 se n3 rmt (n) p3 m3't*

- ‘Have the people of the army stolen (or ‘taken’) it?:’ perfective – people of the army are suspected of having stolen an object or carried away someone;
- ‘Will the people of the army want to take it?’ Prospective.

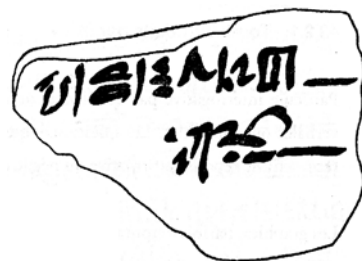
⁴⁵⁹ But regularly so in Wenamun.

43.2.1.1.1 *in* + perfective *sđm.f*

3. P. Turin 2026, v° 2 (= *LRL*, 73, 7).

in in.k se in bwpwy.k in.[tw.f]

‘Have you gone to search for him, or have you not gone to search for him?’⁴⁶⁰



O. Clère

4. P. BM 10326, 8-9 (= *LRL*, 17, 14-15): concerning letters.

in ph.w r.k i.n.k ph.w r.i r-dr.w

‘‘‘Have they reached you?’’ you asked – ‘‘(Yes) they have reached me in (their) entirety.’’

43.2.1.1.2 *in* + prospective *sđm.f*

5. O. IFAO 557 (= *BIFAO* 35 (1935), 46 and pl. II) (fig. p. 236).

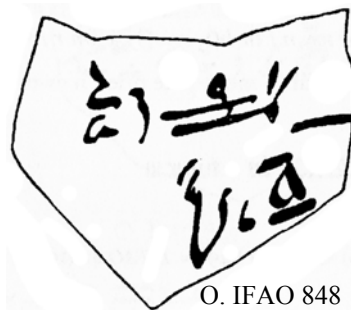
in iw.i n-bl

‘Do I have to go out?’⁴⁶¹

6. O. IFAO 848 (= *BIFAO* 41 (1941), 14 and pl. I).

in tm.i in.tw.w

‘Need I not buy them?’



O. IFAO 848

7. O. IFAO 851 (= *BIFAO* 72 (1972), 57 and pl. XIX).

in tm.i šm r p3 nty sw im

‘Need I not go to the place where he is?’

In the last two examples, where it is the verb itself that is negated, the negative verb *tm* is used. If one simply wishes to ask an interro-negative question (which is equivalent to an assertion), the negative morpheme *bn* is used instead:

8. O. DM 575 (fig. p. 149).

in bn in.i se r p3(y).i pr

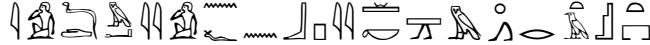
‘Will I not bring them back to my house?’

⁴⁶⁰ Another possible translation: ‘Did you buy it or did you not buy it?’

⁴⁶¹ It is probably a prospective because the verb *iy* / *iw* is intransitive and does not have a perfective *sđm.f*.

43.2.1.2 *in* + *bwpwy.f sdm*

9. P. BM 10052, 4, 2 (= *KRI* vi, 775, 13-14); see also example 3.



i.dd my n.f in b(wp)y.k sm r t3 st

‘Tell him (= me), please: did you not go to the tomb?’

43.2.1.3 *in* + Third Future

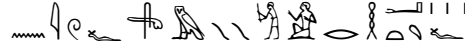
10. O. IFAO 849 (= *BIFAO* 41 (1941), 15 and pl. I).



in iw.f r dit n.n hry m t3 wnw

‘Will we give him a superior now?’

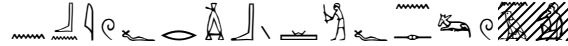
11. O. IFAO 691 (= *BIFAO* 41 (1941), 17 and pl. II).



in iw.f (r) smtr.i r-h'w.f

‘Will he interrogate me himself?’

12. O. IFAO 599 (= *BIFAO* 35 (1935), 46 and pl. II) (fig. p. 236).



in bn iw.f r db3.f n.s iw[n3]

‘Will he not pay it (to her)?’

13. O. IFAO 693 (= *BIFAO* 41 (1941), 17 and pl. II).



in iri t3ty (r) it3 p3 5 dd

‘Will the vizier take the five boys?’⁴⁶²

43.2.1.4 *in* + First Present

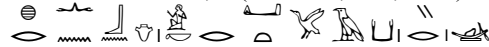
14. O. IFAO 864 (= *BIFAO* 72 (1972), 54 and pl. XVII).



in st dy m sht 3t r-h'w.s(?)

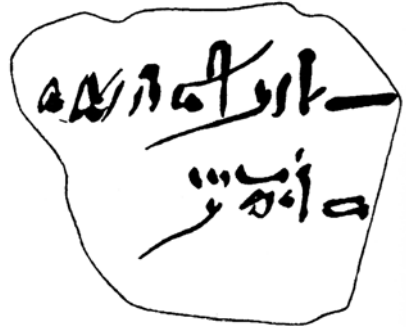
‘Are they here in the Great Field⁴⁶³ itself?’

15. P. Cairo 58056, 8 (= *KRI* III, 255, 9-10).



hr in bn ib.k r dit p3 kr

‘And do you not wish to send⁴⁶⁴ the boat?’



O. IFAO 691



O. IFAO 849

⁴⁶² Either to use them as workers in the Tomb, or to send them to the army.

⁴⁶³ The Valley of the Kings.

⁴⁶⁴ Cf. Wente, *LRL*, p. 54, n. i.

16. P. BM 10375, 26 (= *LRL*, 46, 10).



in bn tw.k m n'cy irm n3 hbsw

‘Are you not journeying with the clothes?’

17. P. Leiden I 365, v° 3-4 (= *KRI* III, 233, 7-8).

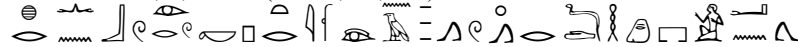


ih p3y.in tm hsf } n.i t3y.i s'ct in tw.in wd3

‘What does it mean that you have not responded to my letter?’⁴⁶⁵ Are you well?’

43.2.1.5 *in* + *bw iri.f sdm* (negative aorist)

18. Wenamun, 2, 66-67 (= *LES*, 74, 1-2).



hr in bw iri.k ptr n3 iw r ddh.i n

‘And can you not see those who have come again to arrest me?’

43.2.1.6 *in* + Second Tense

19. Wenamun, 1, 44-45 (= *LES*, 65, 13).



in i.iri.k dd smn tw m p3 grh r dit wd t3 br i.gm.i

‘Do you say “Rest (then) tonight” for the sole purpose of letting the boat that I found depart?’
Periphrastic second tense.

20. O. Gardiner (= *BIFAO* 72 (1972), 51 and pl. XVI).



in iri.i t3 mdt m sš di.i se n t3ty

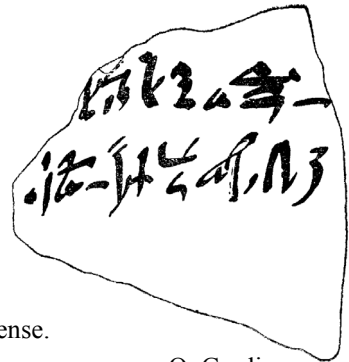
‘Is it in writing that I have to put the matter to submit it to the vizier?’ Modal second tense.

21. O. IFAO 1007 (= *BIFAO* 72 (1972), 59 and pl. XX).



in i.iri.f r t3y

‘Is it against that one that he will want to act?’ Modal second tense.



O. Gardiner

43.2.1.7 *in* + existential predication

22. O. IFAO 884 (= *BIFAO* 72 (1972), 56 and pl. XVIII).



in n3 ihw nty t3 rmt hr w[h3.w] in wn m-di.s ps i[m].w

‘As for the oxen that the woman claims, does she have a share in them?’

⁴⁶⁵ *Lit.* ‘It is what you not having sent me back my letter?’

23. O. IFAO 862 (= *BIFAO* 72 (1972), 54 and pl. XVII).



in mn m-di.s im.w

‘Has she not got them?’

43.2.1.8 *in* + nominal sentence with substantival predicate

24. O. IFAO 999 (= *BIFAO* 72 (1972), 57 and pl. XVIII).



in rmt ddrī

‘Is it a stranger?’

25. O. IFAO 857 (= *BIFAO* 72 (1972), 57 and pl. XIX).



in b3w n 3nynt

‘Is it a manifestation⁴⁶⁶ of Anynakht?’

26. P. BN 198, II, 10-11 (= *LRL*, 67, 16-68, 1).



in p3 3m3 i.iri.k p3y m t3y 20 n rnt i.iri.i m p3y.k pr

‘Is this the discovery that you have made during these twenty years that I have spent in your house?’

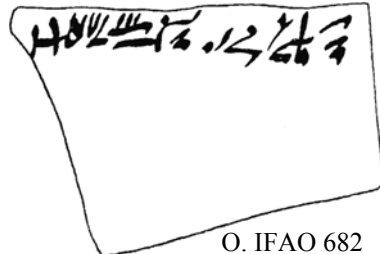
43.2.1.9 *in* + nominal sentence with adjectival predicate

27. O. IFAO 682 (= *BIFAO* 41 (1941), 15 and pl. I).



in nfr p3 bhs šsp. i sw

‘The calf, is it good for me to accept it?’



O. IFAO 682

43.2.1.10 *in* + cleft sentence

28. O. IFAO 501 (= *BIFAO* 35 (1935), 43 and pl. I)



in ntf (i).it3 p3y tm3

‘Is it him who stole this mat?’

29. O. IFAO 870 (= *BIFAO* 72 (1972), 55 and pl. XVII).



in ky it3 (i).it3 sw

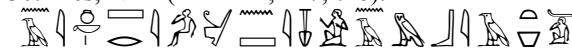
‘Is it another thief who stole it?’

⁴⁶⁶ Or ‘anger.’

43.2.1.11 Special case

The particle *in* can also be found before the morpheme *m-bi3* ‘not.’ The resulting expression serves to strengthen an interrogative construction: (*in*) X *in m-bi3*.

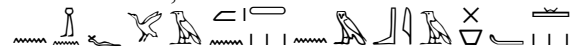
30. Mès, N 11 (= *KRI* III, 427, 7-8).



in ink šri n nšī in m-bi3

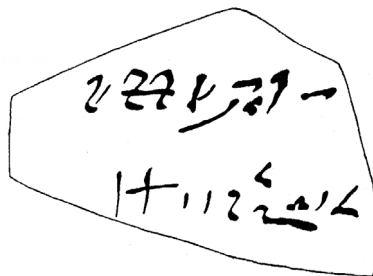
‘Am I son of Neshi or not?’

31. O. DM 608, v° 1.



in in.f n.k p3 gs n ʿqw in m-bi3

‘Has he brought you the half loaf or not?’



O. IFAO 501

43.2.1.12 Remarks

In Late Egyptian the composite particle *in-iw*, specific to Middle Egyptian, is only very rarely found:⁴⁶⁷

32. O. Nash 2, 5-8 (= *KRI* IV, 318, 3-6): 19th dynasty.⁴⁶⁸



ir n3 hl n pr-ʿ3 ʿ.w.s. r(=i).dd.k⁴⁶⁹ t3y se hwy m t3 st pr-ʿ3 ʿ.w.s. in-iw [wn m]-di.k mtryw r.f in m-bi3 ddt.n nb-nfr wn m-di.i mtryw

‘As for the picks of Pharaoh I.p.h. of which you said Huy had stolen from the tomb of Pharaoh I.p.h., do you have any witnesses against him or not? – What Nebnefer replied: “(Yes) I have witnesses.”’ The absence of *iw* in the reply shows that this is the composite particle *in-iw*.

33. P. Northumberland I, 2-3 (= *KRI* I, 239, 4-5): Seti I.



in-iw.k m šs

‘Are you well?’

43.2.2 Syntagmas introduced by *ist*

This particle: , , or , and its variants , are used to ask questions, most often rhetorical, in a formal style.⁴⁷⁰

43.2.2.1 *ist* + *bw iri.s sdm* (negative aorist)

The particle *ist* is very frequently used with the negative aorist, and it is found in all textual genres.

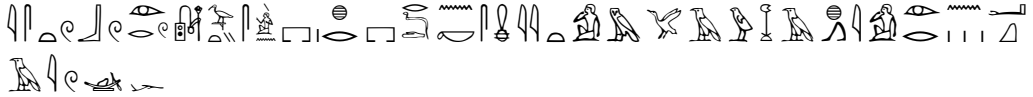
⁴⁶⁷ See Vernus *CdE* 57 (1982), 247. Example in literary idiom: Astarte, 2, x + 19 (= *LES*, 79, 6).

⁴⁶⁸ Another example: *id.*, v° 3: *in-iw swt Ø m-hʿw.f* ‘Does this belong to him alone?’

⁴⁶⁹ For the spelling, see the table of the suffix pronouns §7.1.1.

⁴⁷⁰ In literary texts it also retains its ‘classical’ role, the specification of an event in a narrative context (see Korostovtsev, *Grammaire*, p. 153).

34. P. BM 10375, 23 (= *LRL*, 46, 4-5): letter to a superior.



ist bw iri sš dhwtj-ms n p3 hr {r} dd n.k smi m p3 wh3 i.iri.n c q3

‘The Scribe of the Tomb Djehutymose, could he not report to you on account of the search for the barge that we made?’

35. P. Bologna 1094, 10, 1-2 (= *LEM*, 9, 8-10): school text, model letter.



ir p3 dit i.iri.k iwt.f r-š3-(r) min3 iw.k im m-di.f ist bw iri.k i3.f r t3 qnbt mtw.k dit rwi3.tw p3y.f c nh

‘As for causing him to come⁴⁷¹ here, while you were there with him, could you not take him to the court and have his oath annulled?’

43.2.2.2 *ist* + First Present

36 O. DM 552, verso.

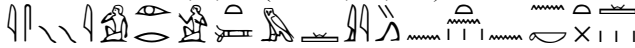


hr ir p3y.k dd sw t3y m br is sw hr rn.i is [sw]⁴⁷² bn sw hr rn.i

‘And as for what you said: “It was stolen from a barge” – Is it in my name? Or is it not in my name?’⁴⁷³

43.2.2.3 *ist* + Second Tense

37. P. Turin 1880, 2, 20 (= *RAD*, 56, 1-2).



ist i.iri.i tm iy n.tn m nkt

‘Is it for a trivial⁴⁷⁴ reason that I did not come to you?’

38. Horus and Seth, 8, 5-6 (= *LES*, 47, 14-15).



i.iri.k qnd hr ih ist bn i.iri.tw m p3w dd tm nb t3wy iwnw hn c p3-r- hr-3hty

‘Why do you make yourself angry? Is it not in accordance with what Atum of Heliopolis, Lord of the Two Lands, and Pre-Horakhty have said that one must act?’

⁴⁷¹ *Lit.* ‘As for the fact that you have caused that he come.’

⁴⁷² Unless $\text{𓆎} \text{𓆏} \text{𓆑}$ is a grapheme of *is*.

⁴⁷³ That is to say ‘Is it or not under my responsibility?’

⁴⁷⁴ *Lit.* ‘Small thing, a trifle.’

43.2.2.4 *īst* + nominal sentence with substantival predicate

39. P. Turin 1880, 3, 2 (= *RAD*, 56, 4).



īs ink p₃ īsty ddy r nhm

‘Would I be the vizier who has (only) been appointed to take?’⁴⁷⁵

43.2.2.5 *īst* + nominal sentence with adjectival predicate

40. O. DM 554, 5 (fig. p. 87).



īs nfr iw.i hr dd n.f

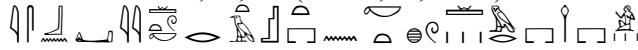
‘Is it good that I talk to him?’

43.2.3 Syntagmas introduced by *īs-bn*

The existence of this composite particle⁴⁷⁶ is certain, since it only occurs before sentences which negation does not employ the negative morpheme *bn*.⁴⁷⁷

43.2.3.1 Possible examples

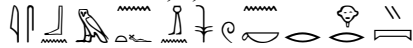
41. P. Anastasi IV, 11, 3-4 (= *LEM*, 46, 13-14).



īs bn dy.tw.k r t₃ st n kthw mr pr-hd

‘Are you not going to be appointed in place of other overseers of the treasury?’ One could hesitate here between *īs-bn* + prospective or *īs* + negative prospective.

42. O. DM 357, a, 3.⁴⁷⁸



īs bn nt f(i).in sw n.k r hry

‘Is it not him who brought it to you up there?’ Again this can be *īs-bn* + cleft sentence or *īs* + negative cleft sentence.

43.2.3.2 Probable examples

43. O. Leipzig 16, v^o 2-3 (= *HO*, XXXIII, 2).⁴⁷⁹



īs-bn tw.i rh.kwi p₃ nty t₃ ih(t) im

‘Do I not know the place where the cow is?’ The ordinary negative correlate of *tw.i rh.kwi* is *bw rh.i*,⁴⁸⁰ therefore, it is very likely that this is the composite particle *īs-bn*.

⁴⁷⁵ See Vernus, *RdE* 32 (1980) 122-123, (d), who understands: ‘who only gives to take back.’

⁴⁷⁶ Not to be confused with *is(t) + bn*.

⁴⁷⁷ See Černý-Groll, *LEG*, §9.12, p. 151.

⁴⁷⁸ Parallel example: P. Anastasi V, 14, 1-2 (= *LEM*, 63, 8-9).

⁴⁷⁹ Parallel example: P. Anastasi V, 26, 4-5 (= *LEM*, 71, 7-8).

⁴⁸⁰ See Černý-Groll, *LEG*, §20.5.4-10, p. 311-313, and Satzinger, *NĀŠ*, p. 188. Exceptions in P. Leiden I 371, 26 and 37.

44. Pentawer Poem, 95 (= *KRI* II, 35, 1-5).



is-bn šm.n.i ḥr n.i hr r(š).k

‘Is it not at your voice that I went where I stopped⁴⁸¹?’ Given that *bn* is hardly ever used before an emphatic *sdm.n.f*,⁴⁸² it is highly probable that the one used here is the composite particle.

43.2.3.3 Examples certain

45. P. Anastasi V, 11, 4-5 (= *LEM*, 61, 12-13).



is-bn wn m-dī.k sšw qnw hr wn m-dī.k šmsw qnw sp-sn

‘Have you not numerous scribes and have you not numerous servants?’ Given that the negation of *wn m-dī.k* is *mn m-dī.k* and that *is-bn* is not repeated after *hr* (factorisation), it is certain that the one used here is the composite particle.

46. Pentawer Poem, 98 (= *KRI* II, 36, 1-4).



is-bn iry.i n.k mnw ššw wrt

‘Have I not made for you countless monuments?’ Before a perfective *sdm.f*, which is negated with *bwpy*, there is no doubt that the one used here is the composite particle.

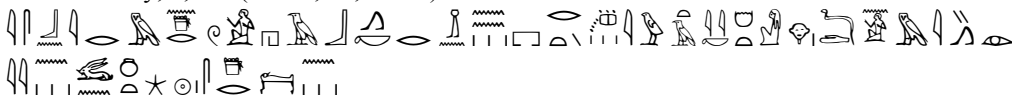
47. P. Anastasi V, 26, 3-4 (= *LEM*, 71, 6-7).



is-bn dd.ḳ n.tn ḥsf n.tn p3 imi-rn.f hr-ḳ mtw.tn it3.f

‘Did I not say to you: “Check the list immediately and take it?”’

48. P. Orbiney, 7, 5-6 (= *LES*, 16, 12-13).



is-bn ir m-dr {wi} hsb.k-wi r in n.n prt iw t3y.k ḥmt hr dd n.i my iri.n wnw sdr.n

‘Is it not (true) that, after having⁴⁸³ (*lit.* ‘that you had me’) sent us to fetch some seeds, your wife said to me: “Come, let us spend an hour in bed?”⁴⁸⁴ In this example, the nuance conveyed by the composite particle *is-bn* affects all of the following correlative system.

43.3 Syntagmas incorporating an interrogative pronoun

The interrogative pronouns (*ih*, *nim*, *it*) can, in any sentence, play any of the roles of a noun. Thus they always occupy the place reserved to the noun which function they fulfill.

⁴⁸¹ That is to say: ‘I have always followed your orders.’

⁴⁸² No examples given in Winand, *Morphologie*, p. 261.

⁴⁸³ The reading *m-dr wi hsb.k(wi)* ‘after I had been sent’ would be possible, but if the prospective is attested after *m-dr*, the first present does not appear to be.

⁴⁸⁴ *Lit.* ‘“being stretched out,” pseudo-participle in the first person plural.

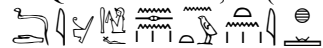
43.3.1 Syntagmas with *ih*

This pronoun, meaning ‘what,’ is used especially for objects and animals. It originates from *ih* ‘thing.’⁴⁸⁵

43.3.1.1 Nominal sentences

ih is very frequently found in nominal sentences, where it plays the role of predicate.

49. Qadesh Bulletin, 35 (= *KRI* II, 110, 3).



ḏd.in ḥm.f n.sn ntwtw ih

‘His Majesty said to them: “What are you?”’⁴⁸⁶

In texts dating from the nineteenth dynasty one can still find examples with *pw*:

50. O. DM 321, 1.⁴⁸⁷



ih pw p3 šhr bñ nty tw.k im.f

‘What is this bad condition in which you wallow?’ (*lit.* ‘It is what this bad condition in which you are?’).

However, as a general rule, *pw* is no longer found in this type of nominal sentence:

51. P. BM 10052, v° 9, 2-3 (= *KRI* VI, 788, 5-6).⁴⁸⁸



ḏd n.f t3ty ih p3 šhr (n) šm i.iri.k r ph n3 swt ʿzywt

‘The vizier said to him: “How did you get to reach the great tombs?”’ (*lit.* ‘It is what the manner of going you made to reach the great places?’).

52. Wenamun, 2, 71 (= *LES*, 74, 10-11).⁴⁸⁹



ih p3y.tn mš^c

‘What does (*lit.* ‘it is what’) your journeying mean?’

This sentence is very often reinforced by the particle *y3*.⁴⁹⁰

⁴⁸⁵ Gardiner, *EG* §501

⁴⁸⁶ *Lit.* ‘you are what,’ not ‘you are who’ where *nim* would be used. Note the use of the atonic independent pronoun as subject. See also p. 188, n. 377.

⁴⁸⁷ Another example: P. Cairo 58083, 3 (= *KRI* I, 322, 6).

⁴⁸⁸ Another example: O. DM 446, 2-3 (= *KRI* II, 383, 9-10).

⁴⁸⁹ Another example: *id.* 2, 22 (= *LES*, 69, 4-5).

⁴⁹⁰ On *y3* in this sentence, see Neveu, *SEAP* 11 (1992), 15-17.

53. O. DM 554, 1-2⁴⁹¹ (fig. p. 87).

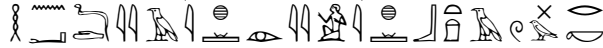


y₃ *ih* p₃y.k tm hn n md₃y nb-mh₃yt

‘Why then have you not gone (*lit.* ‘Now, it is what your action of not having gone’) to the medjay Nebmeht?’

When *ih* is preceded by y₃, the construction can be reduced to y₃ *ih* Ø:

54. P. DM IV, 5 (= *KRI* VI, 265, 1).⁴⁹²



hn^c dd y₃ *ih* iri.i *ih* (m) bt₃ r.k

‘Another thing: “Well, what? What kind of evil deed have I committed against you?”’

There are also constructions of the type *ih* Ø + prepositional expansion:⁴⁹³

55. P. DM V, 2 (= *KRI* VI, 266, 1).⁴⁹⁴



ih Ø r.k

‘What’s up with you?’ (*lit.* ‘It is what about you?’).

56. First Hittite marriage, abridged version, 10 (= *KRI* II, 257, 6).

‘It is every time that he shines that Re says to him:

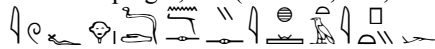


ih m ib.k iry.i se hr.k

‘What do you wish that I perform for you?’ (*lit.* ‘It is what in your heart, so that I do it...’).

Remark. *ih* can be found in a sentence constructed on the model of the nominal sentence with adjectival predicate denoting possession:

57. O. Leipzig 2, 4-6 (= *KRI* V, 467, 15-16) (fig. p. 188).



iw.f hr dd ny-se *ih* t₃ ipt

‘He said: “To whom (= ‘to which institution’) does it belong, the measure?”’

43.3.1.2 Cleft sentences

It is only the pseudo-cleft sentence that is encountered in this context, where *ih* is the rhematised direct object of a predicative plain sentence.

⁴⁹¹ See also example 64 below.

⁴⁹² Another example: P. Abbott, 6, 1 (= *KRI* VI, 477, 4).

⁴⁹³ Interpretation preferable to that as a first present having a prepositional phrase as predicate. See also Neveu, *o.c.*, example (5) where y₃ *ih* Ø + prepositional expansion can be found (Wenamun, 2, 79-80 = *LES*, 75, 9-10).

⁴⁹⁴ Parallel example: Wenamun, 2, 65 (= *LES*, 73, 4).

43.3.1.2.1 Past⁴⁹⁵

58. P. Mayer A, 9, 11 (= *KRI* VI, 821, 2).

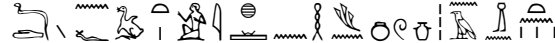


ih p3 in.tn im

‘What have you brought therefrom?’

In the first member of a cleft sentence, *ih* can be accompanied by a prepositional expansion:

59. P. BM 10052, 5, 9-10 (= *KRI* VI, 779, 14-15).

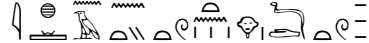


dd n.f t3ty ih n(=m) hnw n3 in.tn

‘The vizier said to him: “What kind of vases did you bring (out)?” (*lit.* ‘It is what as vessels ...’).’

43.3.1.2.2 Present

60. O. DM 126, 3 (= *KRI* III, 532, 3-4).



ih n3 nty tw.tn hr dd.tw.w

‘What is it that you are going to relate?’

43.3.1.2.3 Future

61. Horus and Seth, 16, 3 (= *LES*, 59, 15).



ih p3 nty iw.tw r irt.f n swth

‘What will be done to Seth?’

43.3.1.3 Verbal sentences⁴⁹⁶

In these sentences, *ih* can play the role of subject, object, or object of a preposition.

43.3.1.3.1 *ih* subject (very rare examples)

62. Doomed Prince, 4, 12 (= *LES*, 2, 12).



iyt ih iw.i min3 hms.kwi

‘What can happen as long as I remain seated here?’⁴⁹⁷ Prospective;

but it can also be understood as:

(*r*)-*iy.t ih iw.i min3 hms.kwi*

‘Until happens what will I remain seated here?’ *r sdm.t.f* form.⁴⁹⁸

⁴⁹⁵ For a passive example: P. Anastasi VIII, 1, 11-12 (= *KRI* III, 500, 14).

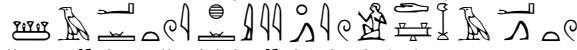
⁴⁹⁶ In a broad sense, including all types of predicate of the first present.

⁴⁹⁷ *Lit.* ‘Will come what, while I am here being seated?’

⁴⁹⁸ See Winand, *Morphologie*, §468, example 696.

Compare with the following example:

63. Wenamun, 2, 66 (= *LES*, 73, 16-74, 1).

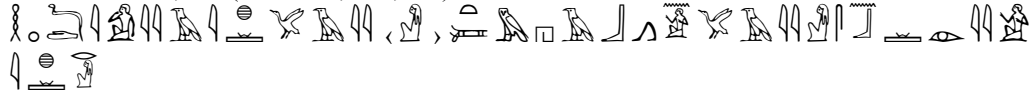


šz^c.tw ih iy (= *šz^c-i.iri.t ih iy*) *iw.i dy hz^c.tw*

‘Until happens what will I be left here?’ *šz^c-i.iri.t.f sdm* form or ⲟⲁⲧⲉϥϣⲟⲧⲙ .

43.3.1.3.2 *ih* direct object

64. P. DM XVIII, 5-6 (= *KRI* VII, 384, 2-4).⁴⁹⁹



hn^c dd yz ih pzy.ϥ tm hzb n.i pzy.t snb iri.i ih r.t

‘Another thing: why have you not sent me (news) of your health? What have I done against you?’ Perfective.

65. O. DM 328, 8-10 (= *KRI* III, 535, 13-14).



i.dd n.f iry.k ih (m) p3 hrw

– ‘Tell him: “What have you done today?”’ Perfective, or:

– “What will you do today?” Prospective.

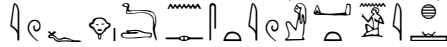
66. P. BM 10052, 6, 3-4 (= *KRI* VI, 782, 2).



iw.i (hr) dd n.w iw.i (r) wnm ih m-di.tn

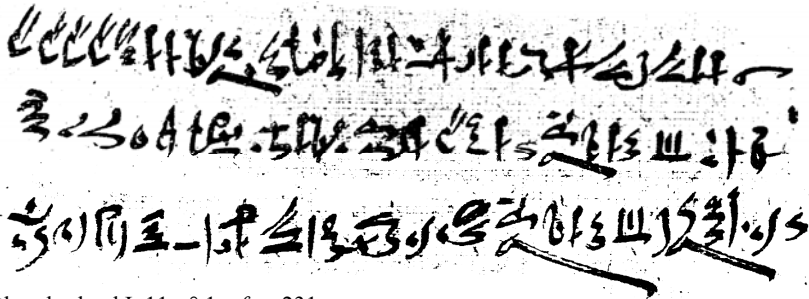
‘I said to them: “What will I eat with you⁵⁰⁰?”’ Third Future.

67. Horus and Seth, 5, 12 (= *LES*, 43, 15).



iw.f hr dd n.s iw.t (r) dit n.i ih

‘He asked him: “What will you give me?”’ Third Future.



P. Northumberland I, 11-v^o 1, cf. p. 231

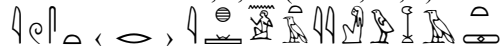
⁴⁹⁹ See also example 57 above.

⁵⁰⁰ That is to say: ‘What will my share of the booty be?’

43.3.1.3.3 *ih* object of a preposition

The main combinations are: ***r ih*** ‘why, until when’ (*lit.* ‘until what’); ***mi ih*** ‘how, by means of what;’ ***hr ih*** ‘why, for what reason.’

68. Horus and Seth, 5, 13 (= *LES*, 44, 1).



iw.s r⁵⁰¹ ih n.i tzy.t whzt

‘What should I do with your food?’ (*lit.* ‘It will be what for me ...’).

69. P. Northumberland I, 11- v° 1 (= *KRI* I, 239, 13-15) (fig. p. 230): it is a woman speaking.



tw.k mi ih sp-sn sp-sn sp-sn sp-sn ib.i r ptr.k r ih sp-sn iw irty.i mi ʿz mn-nfr p3wn tw.i hqr.k(wi) m ptr.k

‘How are you, oh you, you, you, you? Until when will I languish thus for you?⁵⁰² – while my eyes are as big as Memphis so hungry am I (*lit.* ‘because I am famished’) for the sight of you!’

Most often, these interrogative syntagma are rhematised by second tenses:⁵⁰³

70. P. BM 10052, 1, 16-17 (= *KRI* VI, 768, 12-14).



ir tz st i.hn.k r.s i.iri.k gm.s mi ih

‘As for the tomb where you went, how (= ‘in what condition’) did you find it?’

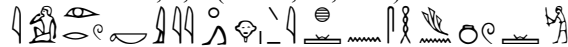
71. O. DM 580, 4-5 (= *KRI* V, 575, 2-3).



i.iri.k itz zht.i hr ih

‘Why have you stolen my things?’



72. Wenamun, 2, 3 (= *LES*, 67, 9-10).



i.iri.k iy hr ih n(=m) shn

‘On what kind of mission have you come?’ (*lit.* ‘About what as mission ...’).

43.3.2 Sentences with *nim*

This pronoun, used for persons, derives from  *in* +  *m*, where *in* is the Middle Egyptian particle used in cleft sentences, and *m* the interrogative particle of this stage of the language. Its origin having been forgotten, scribes sometimes used in cleft sentences *m nim*, where *m* is the

⁵⁰¹ See Gardiner, *LES*, p. 44, note 5, 13a. See also this part of the Story of the Revenant (= *LES*, 93, 8): *iw.w r ih n3 i.iri.k* ‘What is the point of what you have done?’ (*lit.* ‘They will be what the (things) that you have done?’).

⁵⁰² *Lit.* ‘My heart is towards seeing you until what.’

⁵⁰³ Another non-rhematised example: P. BM 10052, 8, 13 (= *KRI* VI, 786, 12) *iw.w m-di.i n ih*; the meaning is obscure.

43.3.2.2 Cleft sentences

43.3.2.2.1 Past

79. O. DM 582, 5-6 (= *KRI* v, 575, 15) (fig. p. 242).



m nīm i.dī n.k p3 ʿ3

‘Who (*lit.* ‘it is who, that’) gave you the donkey?’

80. P. Orbiney, 4, 10 (= *LES*, 14, 1-2).



m nīm (i).mdw m-dī.t

‘Who has spoken (evil) with you?’

43.3.2.2.2 Future

81. Pentawer poem, 330 (= *KRI* II, 97, 13).



m nīm t3y.f tw hrw qnd.k

‘Who will resist you on the day of your anger?’

82. P. Turin 2021, 3, 11-12 (= *KRI* VI, 741, 10-11).



[nīm i].iri.f wsf p3 iri.f

‘[Who] will undo what he has done?’

43.3.2.3 Verbal sentences

43.3.2.3.1 *nīm* subject

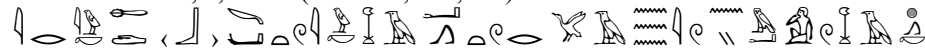
83. P. Turin 2021, 3, 10 (= *KRI* VI, 741, 7-8).



ir p3 iry.f iri [n]īm (r) rh mdt im.f

‘As for what he has done, who will be able to contest it?’ Third Future where *nīm* is treated as a noun.

84. P. BM 10052, 3, 16-17 (= *KRI* VI, 774, 7-8).



ir iw.k hd(b).tw iw.k h3ʿ.tw r p3 mw iw nīm (r) wh3.k

‘If you are killed and thrown in the water, who will seek you?’⁵⁰⁹

43.3.2.3.2 *nīm* genitive

85. P. Anastasi IV, 10, 11-12 (= *LEM*, 46, 8-9).



iw.k r pr nīm

‘To whom are you going?’ (*lit.* ‘You are towards the house of whom?’)

⁵⁰⁹ Third future, despite the previous example. It appears that with *nīm* the third future can be constructed with *iri* or *iw*.

43.3.2.3.3 *nīm* object of a preposition

86. P. Anastasi VIII, 1, 9-11 (= *KRI* III, 500, 10-13).

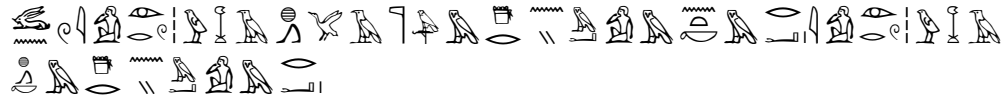


ir n3 s'rt n p3 nṯr ... di.tw.w m sbwt n nīm

‘As for the wool (pl.) of the god ... to whom has it been given as cargo?’ (*lit.* ‘they were given in the capacity of cargo to whom?’).

The resulting adverbial phrase can be rhematised by a second tense:

87. Wenamun, 1, 56-57 (= *LES*, 66, 16-67, 2).



wn i.iri.w wh3 p3 nṯr m-di nīm ntk m-r' i.iri.w wh3.k m-di m-r'

‘From whom would the god be sought? And you too, from whom would you be sought?’

43.3.3 Sentences with *it*

This interrogative pronoun, meaning ‘what, who, which,’ is very rare.

88. P. BM 10052, 13, 7-8 (= *KRI* VI, 795, 14-15).



it šmsw n iw.f-n-inn p3 iy n.k

‘Which servant of Iuefenamun is it, the one who came to you?’ Nominal sentence.⁵¹⁰

89. P. Anastasi V, 20, 4 (= *LEM*, 67, 7).



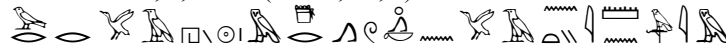
m it sḥty (i).gm r.w

‘Which is the patrol⁵¹¹ (*lit.* ‘It is which patrol’) who found their tracks?’ True cleft sentence.

43.3.4 Sentences with *wr*

Although classified by Černý-Groll⁵¹² among adverbs, this term, derived from the adjective meaning ‘great’ (from the adjective verb *wrr* ‘to be great’), and which is generally rendered by ‘how,’ appears to behave like a pronoun⁵¹³ whose meaning would be: ‘what greatness, what amount.’

90. Wenamun, 1, 50-51 (= *LES*, 66, 7).



wr r p3 hrw m-dr iw.k n(=m) p3 nty inn im

‘How long has it been since you left the place where Amun resides?’ (*lit.* ‘It is what amount (of

⁵¹⁰ And not a cleft sentence, because in this case one would have had: **(m) it šmsw n iw.f-n-inn i.y n.k*, that is to say, a cleft sentence of type I (see following example), in which can appear verbs of motion. See *supra* §42.1.2.1, note b.

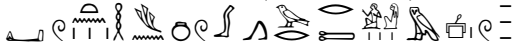
⁵¹¹ Rare word that Janssen in *Ship's Logs*, p. 46, renders – like other translators – as ‘guard, body guard.’ Here it refers to surveillance units travelling across the desert and controlling the nomads.

⁵¹² *LEG*, §8.2.2, p. 136.

⁵¹³ Vycychl, *Dictionnaire étymologique de la langue copte*, p. 236.

days) until today since you came from where Amun is?').

91. P. Anastasi V, 20, 5 (= *LEM*, 67, 8).



di.tn hn wr (n) rmt m-sz.w

– ‘How many men have you dispatched (*lit.* ‘made run’) in their pursuit?’ Perfective, or:

– ‘How many men are you going to dispatch ...?’ Prospective.



92. P. Anastasi I, 27, 8.




se hr irt wr n itrw m sm r-sz-(r) qdt

‘How many leagues does he have to travel until Gaza?’ (*lit.* ‘He does what amount of leagues walking ...’).

43.3.5 Remarks

There is still an interrogative pronoun written *hy*  or *hr* ⁵¹⁴ that is only found in the formulaic sentence: *hy qd.k* ‘How are you?’ (*lit.* ‘What is your (present) condition?’), in the eighteenth⁵¹⁵ and nineteenth⁵¹⁶ dynasties.⁵¹⁷ The expression becomes: *hy c.k* in the nineteenth dynasty,⁵¹⁸ and then, in the twentieth dynasty, *hr c.k* with the same meaning.

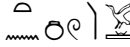
93. P. Leiden I 369, 5 (= *LRL*, 1, 7).



hr c.tn hr c n nzy.tn rmt

‘How are you? How are your people?’

43.4 Syntagmas incorporating an interrogative adverb

The only representative of this category is:  (and variants) *tnw* ‘where?’ ‘whence?’

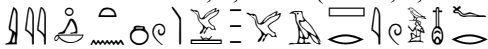
94. Truth and Falsehood, 5, 6 (= *LES*, 33, 2).⁵¹⁹



s(w) tnw pzy.k it

‘Where is your father?’ (*lit.* ‘Where is he, your father?’). First present.

95. Doomed Prince, 5, 10-11 (= *LES*, 3, 15-16).⁵²⁰



iy.k tnw pz sri nfr

‘From where have you come, beautiful child?’ Second tense.

⁵¹⁴ Not to be confused with the coordinating particle *hr*, see §10.1.

⁵¹⁵ P. Louvre 3230 A, 4 (= *JEA* 12 (1926), pl. XVII); P. BM 10103, 4 (= *JEA* 14 (1928), pl. XXXV).

⁵¹⁶ P. Northumberland I, 2 (= *KRI* I, 239, 4); P. Sallier IV, v° 1, 3 (= *LEM*, 89, 3).

⁵¹⁷ See Barns, *JEA* 34 (1948), 38, n. 2.

⁵¹⁸ P. Leiden I 365, 4 (= *KRI* III, 232, 14-15); P. Sallier IV, v° 2, 2 (= *LEM*, 90, 2).

⁵¹⁹ Parallel examples: *id.*, 8, 6 (= *LES*, 34, 15); Wenamun, 1, 51-52 and 54-55 (= *LES*, 66, 9-10 and 13-14); Qadesh Bulletin, §12 and 38 (= *KRI* II, 105, 2 and 110, 11); P. Anastasi I, 27, 8.

⁵²⁰ Parallel example: Astarte, 2, x + 18 (= *LES*, 79, 4-5).

96. P. Anastasi IV, 10, 11 (= LEM, 46, 8).

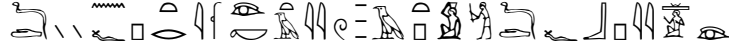


iw.k r tnw

‘Where will you go?’ Third future.

43.5 Questions without interrogative morphemes

97. P. BM 10052, 14, 16-17 (= KRI VI, 798, 16-799, 1).



dd.tw n.f ptr.k tzy.w stp dd.f b(w)p(w)y.i ptr

‘He was asked: “Did you see their cargo?” He replied: “I did not see (anything).”’

98. O. Gardiner 4, v° 4-6 (= KRI VI, 142, 11-13).



iw sš imn-nht (hr) hꜥ m-b3h p3 ntr r-dd ir n3 hbsw i.dd.k m t3 šri(t) n sš imn-nht r(-i).it3 se iw p3 ntr (hr) hn

‘The scribe Amunnakht stood before the god saying: “As for the clothes of which you spoke, is it the daughter of the scribe Amunnakht who stole them?” The god assented.’

99. Horus and Seth, 15, 12-13 (= LES, 59, 5-8).

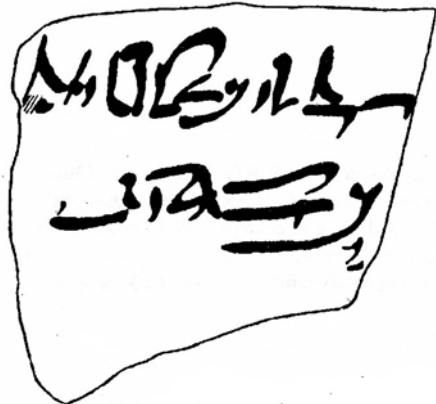


wn.in tm hr dd n.f i.iri.k tm dit wdꜥ.tw.tn hr ih iw.k (r) nhm n.k t3 ist n hr wn.in swth hr dd n.f m-bi3 p3y.i nb nfr

‘Atum asked him: “Why have you prevented that you be judged? Are you going to take for yourself the office of Horus?” Seth replied him: “No, my good lord!”’



O. IFAO 557 (cf. p. 219)



O. IFAO 599 (cf. p. 220)

Handwritten text in a cursive script, likely a historical document or manuscript. The text is densely packed and spans approximately 20 lines. It appears to be written in a language that may be related to the historical context of the page number (1005) and the reference to P. Abbott, 6 (cf. p. 208). The script is highly stylized and difficult to decipher without specialized knowledge of the language.

APPENDIX TWO

SYLLABIC WRITING

44. Appendix two: Syllabic Writing

44.1 Introduction⁵²¹

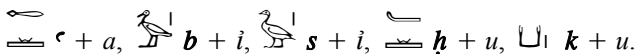
Syllabic writing, or, more accurately, ‘group writing,’ is a very flexible system, purely phonetic (never ideogrammatic), used whenever the scribe is not linguistically driven, that is, whenever he cannot relate the word to a known root.

Although employed since the 11th dynasty, the system experienced considerable development during the New Kingdom when Egypt, through its conquests, found itself in contact with many foreign countries. Syllabic writing allowed one to write many foreign words (names of countries and cities, people, new objects), but also new Egyptian words that had never been written out, old words which etymology was forgotten, or that one, perhaps, wanted to write in a new way.

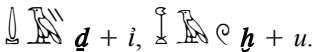
The system consists of ‘groups,’ each with the value of consonant + vowel. Each group can contain a biliteral sign, possibly accompanied by a determinative, and/or one or more uniliteral signs, or can simply consist of uniliteral signs.

Examples of the first type:

- Biliterals only (sometimes with a determinative):

 $\overline{\text{c}} + a$, $\text{b} + i$, $\text{s} + i$, $\text{h} + u$, $\text{k} + u$.

- Biliterals + unilaterals:

 $\text{d} + i$, $\text{h} + u$.


Examples of the second type:

 $\text{k} + a$, $\text{k} + i$, $\text{k} + u$, $\text{k} + \hat{e}$,⁵²² $\text{r} + i$, $\text{r} + \hat{e}$, $\text{h} + u$.

Important remark: If each group has a certain consonantal value, the same is not true for its vocalic value.⁵²³ In these instances, it may be best to retain in transliteration only the consonantal value of the group.

44.2 Usage

44.2.1 Writing foreign words


 (KRI II, 230, 8) *qđwđn* ‘Qizzuwadna’⁵²⁴

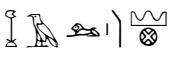
⁵²¹ See Schenkel, *LÄ* VI, 114-121; Helck, *SAK* 16 (1989), 121-143; Hoch, *Semitic Words in Egyptian Texts*, 1994, p. 487-504.


⁵²² The value \hat{e} for  seems well attested.

⁵²³ With the exception of \hat{e} , see previous note.


⁵²⁴ Name of country.

 (KRI II, 4, 8) **krkmš** ‘Carchemish’

 (LES, 61, 10) **hr** ‘Khar, the Hurrian countries (Syria)’


 (KRI II, 105, 7) **hlb** ‘Aleppo’

 (KRI IV, 19, 7) **isrl** ‘Israel’

 (LES, 62, 10) **tkrbʿl** ‘Tjekerbaal’⁵²⁵


 (KRI IV, 19, 3-4) **šlm** ‘shalom’ or ‘salam’


44.2.2 Writing words of foreign origin (loan words)


 (LEM, 35, 8) **brq** ‘sparkle, shine’


 (KRI VI, 805, 8) **bdn** ‘staff, cudgel’

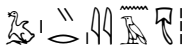
 (LEM, 53, 3) **mrkbt** ‘chariot’

 (KRI IV, 411, 9-10) **hnr** or **hl**⁵²⁶ ‘chisel (of quarry-worker)’

 (KRI IV, 411, 10) **qrdn** ‘hoe’ or ‘pick (of quarry-worker)’

 (LEM, 32, 6) **ktn** ‘charioteer, chariot driver’


 (LEM, 47, 8-9) **gws** ‘become bent, become twisted’

 (KRI II, 28, 13) **tryn** ‘cuirass’

44.2.3 Writing Egyptian words

– **recent** (new words or loan-words of unattested origin):

⁵²⁵ Name of person.

⁵²⁶ Note the frequent combination of *n* + *r* = *l*. The word is often abbreviated as .

𐩧𐩢𐩨𐩠𐩢𐩨 *irm* 'with'

𐩧𐩢𐩨𐩠𐩢𐩨 *bnr* or *bl* 'outside'⁵²⁷

– **traditional** (re-written in a new way?)

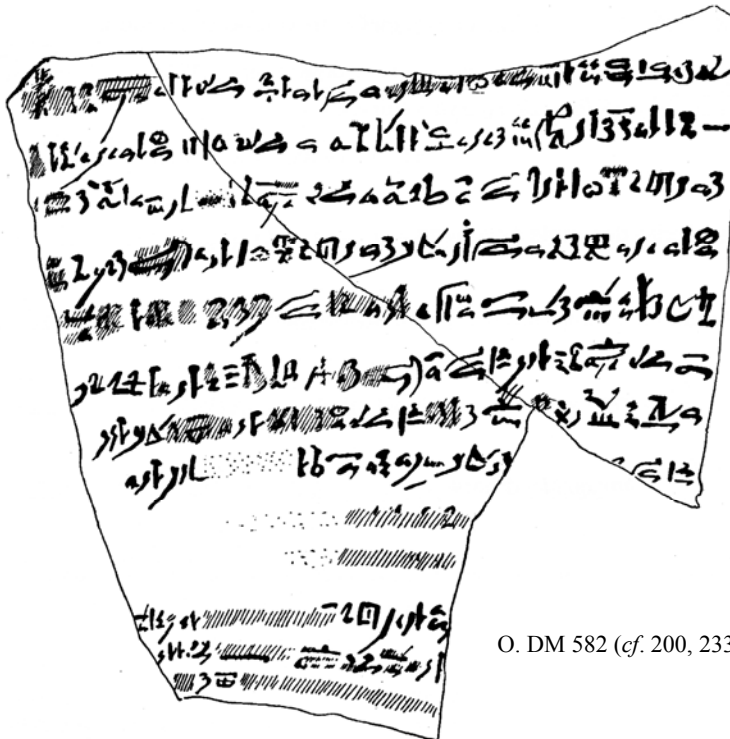
𐩧𐩢𐩨𐩠𐩢𐩨 (LES, 19, 16) *hrtt* 'flower,' cf. 𐩧𐩢𐩨𐩠𐩢𐩨 (URK IV, 775, 16)

Remark

Syllabic writing is also used to write diminutives:

𐩧𐩢𐩨𐩠𐩢𐩨 *hwy*, diminutive of 𐩧𐩢𐩨𐩠𐩢𐩨 *imn-htp*

𐩧𐩢𐩨𐩠𐩢𐩨 *ipy*, diminutive of 𐩧𐩢𐩨𐩠𐩢𐩨 *imn-m-ipt*



O. DM 582 (cf. 200, 233)

⁵²⁷ Coptic: 𐩧𐩢𐩨.

INDEXES

Handwritten text in a South Indian script, likely Grantha or Tamil, written in black ink on a light background. The text is arranged in approximately 15 horizontal lines, with some lines starting with a decorative flourish or symbol. The script is dense and cursive, characteristic of traditional South Indian manuscripts. The text appears to be a form of liturgical or philosophical writing, possibly a commentary or a specific type of prayer or invocation. The lines are roughly parallel, with some variations in line length and spacing between characters.

Grammar index¹

Adverbs, 9;

- interrogative, 11.2.3; 43.4;
- used as predicate of the First Present, 16.2.

Adverbial clauses

- introduced by *iw*, 32;
- substituting relative clauses, 32.3 (table);
- substituting complement clauses, 32.4;
- introduced by *ir*, 33.2;
- introduced by *wnn*, 34.1 and 2;
- introduced by *inn*, 35;
- introduced by *hn*, 36.2;
- introduced by *bsi*, 36.3;
- introduced by *hl* (*hnr*), 36.4.

Aorist, 16.4, note 2; 42.1.2.1; 42.2.1.4.

Aorist (demotic), 17.6.

Aorist (negative), 16.4.4;

- remark; 17; 24.4;
- preceded by *iw*, 32.1;
- preceded by *in*, 43.2.1.5;
- preceded by *ist*, 43.2.2.1.

Articles, 2;

- definite, 2.1;
- indefinite, 2.2.

Autonomy, 12.1.

Cleft sentences, 12.4.2; 27.1.4; 28.4.2; 35.2; 42;

- preceded by *in*, 43.2.1.10;
- preceded by *inn*, 35.1;
- true cleft sentence, 42.1.2.1;
- pseudo-cleft sentence, 42.1.2.2.

Comment, 12.4.2.

Complement clauses

- after *rdi*, 26.1;
- after ‘operator’ verbs, 32.5.

Continuative forms, 25.

Conjunctive, 25.3; 34.1.

Converters, 11.3.

Correlative system, definition, 32.2.2;

- introduced by *iw*, 32.2.2;
- introduced by *ir*, 33.2;

- introduced by *wnn*, 34.1 and 2;
- introduced by *inn*, 35;
- introduced by *hn*, 36.2;
- introduced by *bsi*, 36.3;
- introduced by *hl* (*hnr*), 36.4.

Demonstratives, 3; 39.2.

Deontic, 19.1.

Discourse, 12.3.2.2.

Enunciation, 12.3.

Expressing possession, 41.

Focalisation, 12.4.2.

Focus, 12.4.2.

Forms

- independent and subordinate, 12.1;
- initial and non-initial, 12.2;
- narrative and non-narrative, 12.3.1.

Future, 16.5.1.

(Third) Future, 19; 35.2; 38.1;

- preceded by *wn*, 19.2; 36.2;
- preceded by *nty*, 29.6;
- preceded by *iw*, 32.1;
- preceded by *in*, 43.2.1.3;
- preceded by *inn*, 35.1;
- preceded by *ir*, 33.2.1.3.

Imperative, 21; 34.1; 35.2.

Indefinites, 6.

Infinitive, 13; 16.4; 16.5; 28.4.1, Note; 38.2.

Initiality, 12.2.

Interrogative pronouns, 11.2.2; 39.2.1.2.

Interrogative sentences, 43.

Narrative, 12.3.1.

Negative (morphemes), 11.1.

Nominal sentences with adjectival predicate, 40;

- preceded by *in*, 43.2.1.9;

¹ The table of contents should also be consulted, since the indexes do not list all of the various sections. The numbers refer to chapters and paragraphs.

- preceded by *ist*, 43.2.2.5.
- Nominal sentences with adverbial predicate**, 16.1.
- Nominal sentences with substantival predicate**, 39;
 - type *B Ø*, 34.3;
 - preceded by *in*, 43.2.1.8;
 - preceded by *ist*, 43.2.2.4.
- ‘Not yet’ form**, 18;
 - preceded by *nty*, 29.8.
- Numerals**, 5;
 - cardinal, 5.1;
 - ordinal, 5.2.
- Participles**, 27;
 - active, 27.1; 42.1.2.1;
 - active periphrased, 27.1.1; 27.1.3;
 - passive, 27.2; 42.1.2.2.
- Particles**, 10;
 - interrogative, 11.2.1.
- Passages**
 - narrative, 12.3.1; 16.6.2.1; 16.6.2.2;
 - non-narrative, 12.3.1; 16.6.2.1; 16.6.2.2.
- Plain sentence**, 12.4.2.
- Possessives**, 4.
- Predication of classification**, 39.2.
- Predication of identification**, 39.3.
- Predication of existence**, 22;
 - preceded by *nty*, 29.8;
 - preceded by *iw*, 32.1;
 - preceded by *ir*, 33.2.1.4;
 - preceded by *in*, 43.2.1.7;
 - preceded by *inn*, 35.1;
 - preceded by *hn*, 36.2.
- Prepositions**, 8.
- Present**, 16.4;
 - unmarked, 16.4;
 - general, 16.4; 16.4.3; 24.4;
 - habitual, 16.4; 16.4.2; 24.4;
 - immediate, 16.4; 16.4.1;
 - synchronic, 16.4.
- (First) Present**, 16;
 - preceded by *nty*, 29.4 and 5;
 - preceded by *iw* (= circumstantial), 32.1; 38.1;
 - found in the second member of a nominal sentence with adjectival predicate, 40.5;
 - preceded by *in*, 43.2.1.4;
 - preceded by *ir*, 33.2.1.1;
 - preceded by *ist*, 43.2.2.2;
 - preceded by *wnn*, 34.1;
 - preceded by *inn*, 35.1;
 - preceded by *hn*, 36.2;
 - preceded by *bsi*, 36.3.
- Personal pronouns**, 7;
 - new direct object pronouns, 7.3; 21.1;
 - dependent, 7.2; 21.1;
 - independent, 7.4; 39.2; 39.3; 41.2; 41.4; 42.1.2.1; 42.1.2.2;
 - prefixes of the First Present, 16.1.1;
 - suffixes, 7.1.
- Pseudo-participle**, 14; 16.6; 19.4; 32.5.1; 33.2.2.4.
- Narrative**, 12.3.2.1.
- Relative forms**, 28; 42.1.2.2;
 - periphrased, 28.1; 28.2; 38.2.
- Relative clauses** (table), 31.
- Rhematisation**, 12.4.2; 42.1.
- Rheme**, 12.4.1; 12.4.2;
 - marked, 12.4.2; 23.1; 23.2; 42.1.
- Second tenses**, 12.4.2; 23;
 - periphrased 23.4;
 - modal (non-periphrased), 23.5;
 - archaic, 23.6; 38.2;
 - preceded by *nty*, 29.8;
 - preceded by *iw*, 32.1;
 - preceded by *in*, 43.2.1.6;
 - preceded by *inn*, 35.1;
 - preceded by *ist*, 43.2.3.3.
- Sequential**, 25.2; 33.2.1.1; 33.2.1.2.1; 34.1; 38.1;
 - preceded by *ir*, 33.2.2.1.
- Substantive**, 1;
 - defined, 1.2; 42.1.2.1;
 - undefined, 1.2.
- Syllabic writing**, 44.
- Thematisation**, 12.4.2; 33.1; 33.4.
- Theme**, 12.4.1; 12.4.2; 23.1; 23.2; 42.1.

Theory of the three points of view,
12.4.1.

Topicalisation, 12.4.2; 33.1.

Topic, 12.4.2; 33.4.

Utterances (marked and unmarked),
12.4.2.

Verbal forms

- independent, 15 to 24;
- subordinate, 25 to 37.

Verbs

- intransitive, 14.2;
- of motion, 16.5; 16.6.2.1; 24.3.1;
- other, 16.6.2.2; 24.3.2;
- ‘operator,’ 32.5.

Egyptian grammar index

- i*, see ‘prosthetic yod.’
- i.iri.f sdm. (f)** + adverbial, 23.1 and 4.
- i.iri.t.f sdm.** 37.
- i.sdm (se)**, 21.1.
- i.sdm (se)** + adverbial, 23.1 and 5.
- iw** (circumstantial), 7.1.2; 11.3; 32; 38.1;
- preceding the First Present with pronominal subject, 16.1.1;
 - preceded by *ir*, 33.2.2.2;
 - before a nominal sentence, 39.2; 39.3.
- iw** (of the Third Future), 19; 38.1.
- iw** (parenthetical), 32.1, remark 2; 38.1.
- iw** (of the sequential) 25.2; 38.1.
- iw.f (?) sdm.** 33.2.3; 38.1.
- iw.f r sdm.** see Third Future.
- iw.f hr (tm) sdm.** see Sequential.
- iw sdm.f** passive, 15.2.1.
- iw sdm.n.f**, 15.1.
- imi** (imperative of *rdi*), 21.1.
- in** (preposition introducing the agent of the process), 13.2; 13.4.2.2.2; 27.2.2.
- in** (interrogative particle), 11.2.1; 35.2 (*in fine*); 43.2.1.
- in-iw**, 43.2.1.12.
- inn**, 35.
- ir**, 10.2; 12.4.2; 33.
- ir + iw** (circumstantial), 33.2.2.2.
- iri** (auxiliary), 13.2; 27.1.1.
- iri** (before the Third future with nominal subject), 19.3.
- ih** (particle preceding the prospective *sdm.f*), 20; 25.3, example 9.
- ih** (interrogative pronoun), 11.2.2; 39.2.1.2; 42.1.2.2; 43.3.1.
- is-bn**, 43.2.3.
- ist**, 11.2.1; 43.2.2.
- it**, 11.2.2; 43.3.3.
- y3**, 10.4.
- ḥꜥ.n sdm.f**, 25.2.4.
- ḥꜥ.n.f hr sdm.**, 25. 2.4.
- wꜥ**, 2.2.
- wn** (past converter), 7.1.2; 11.3; 38.1; 38.4;
- before the First Present, 16.2; 16.3;
 - before the First Present with pronominal subject, 16.1.1;
 - before the Third Future, 19.2; 36.2;
 - before the Second Tenses, 23.4.1.
- wn** (of existence), 22.1; 38.4.
- (i).wn** (participle), 27.1.2; 30.1 and 2; 42.1.2.2.
- (i).wn.f** (relative form), 28.2; 30.1 and 3.
- wn.in.f hr sdm.** 25.2.4.
- wnn**, 7.1.2; 11.3; 18.2; 34; 38.4.
- wr**, 43.3.3.
- bw**, 11.1; 38.5.
- bw iri.f sdm.** 17.1; 17.5; 24.4;
- preceded by *in*, 43.2.1.5;
 - preceded by *ist*, 43.2.2.1.
- bw iri.t.f sdm.** 18.1; 24.4.
- bw sdm.f**, 15.1.2.3, remark 2; 17.1; 17.4; 24.4; 36.2.
- bw sdm.n.f**, 17.1; 17.3.
- bw sdm.t.f**, 18.1.
- bw sdm.y.t N**, 18.2.
- bwpwy**, 38.5.
- bwpwy.Ø sdm.** 15.2.2.
- bwpwy.f sdm.** 15.1.2; 16.6.2.1 (*bwpwy.f ʕq*); 24.4;
- preceded by *nty*, 29.7;
 - preceded by *iw*, 32.1;
 - preceded by *in*, 43.2.1.2;
 - preceded by *inn*, 35.1.
- bwpwy.tw sdm.** 15.2.2; 16.1.1.
- bn**, 11.1; 38.1; 38.5;
- negation of the First present 16.2; 16.3; 16.4.4; 16.5; 16.6.1; 16.6.2.2;
 - negation of the Third Future, 19.2; 19.3;
 - negation of the independent prospective, 20;
 - taking on the predication alone, 22.3;
 - negation of the second tense nexus, 23.4.2;
 - negation of the expression of possession, 41.1.
- bn ... iwn3**, 11.1;
- negation of the First Present, 16.3;
 - negation of the Second Tense nexus, 23.4.2;
 - negation of nominal sentences, 39.2; 39.3.

bsi, 36.3.
pɜ, 2.1.
pɜy, 3.1; 39.2; 39.2.2.2; 39.2.2.3; 39.3;
 39.3.2.1.2.
pɜy.f, 4.1.
pɜw, 3.1.3; 39, example 34.
pɜwn, 10.3.
pw, 34.3; 39.2.2; 39.2.2.3; 42.1.2.2.
pn (demonstrative), 3.1.3.
pn (abbreviation of *pɜ-n*), 3.2.1; 3.2.2,
 example 8.
ptr, 10.5.

m (imperative of the negative verb *imi*),
 21.2.1; 21.2.2.
m (morpheme introducing a true cleft
 sentence), 42.1.2.1.
m (preposition), 42.5.
m-biɜ, 43.2.1.11.
m-ht sdm.f, 26.3; 33.2.2.3.
m-dr sdm.f, 26.3; 33.2.2.3.
my (imperative of *iw/iy*), 21.1.
my (imperative reinforcing particle), 21.1.
mn, 22.2; 38.5.
mk, 10.5.
mtw.f (tm) sdm, see Conjunctive.

n (negation), 11.1.
n ... is, 11.1.
n pɜ.f sdm, 15.1.2.1.
n sdm.f, 15.1.2.3, remark 2; 24.4.
n sdm.n.f, 15.1.2.3, remark 2; 17.1; 24.4.
n.sdm.t.f, 18.1.
nɜ (n), 2.1.
nɜy, see *pɜy*.
nim, 11.2.2; 19.3; 39.2.1.2; 42.1.2.1; 43.3.2.
ny (genitival adjective), 41.1.
ny-se, 41.1.
nɣy (auxiliary of the First Future), 16.5.1.
nb, 1.2; 6.1.
nn, 11.1.
nh(ɜ)y n, 2.2.
nkt, 6.3.
nty, 11.3; 27.1.2; 28.2; 29; 30.1; 38.1;
 42.1.2.2.

r sdm.t.f, 37.1; 37.3.
r-tnw sdm.f, 26.3.
r-dd (introducing a complement clause), 32.5.4.
rh, 16.7.

hn, 19.2; 36.2.

hnɣ ntf (tm) sdm, 25.3.
hl (hnr), 36.4.

hy, var. *hr*, 43.3.5.
hr, 10.1; 33.2.1.1; 34.1; 38.1.
hr ir.f sdm, 17.6.
hr-sdm.f, 17.6; 24.4.
hr.f sdm, 17.6.

se, 7.2.1.
sw im, 16.2.
sw m pɜ pr, 16.3.
sw hr sdm, 16.4.
sw m ɣq, 16.5.
sw wɜh, 16.6.1.
sw ɣq, 16.6.2.1.
sw sdr, 16.6.2.2.
swl, 7.4.1; 41.2.
sdm.f (various values), 38.2.
sdm.f perfective, 15; 16.6.2.2; 24.4; 38.2;
 – active, 15.1;
 – passive, 15.2;
 – preceded by *iw*, 32.1;
 – preceded by *in*, 43.2.1.1.1;
 – preceded by *inn*, 35.1;
 – preceded by *ir*, 33.2.1.2.1;
 – preceded by *hn*, 36.2.
sdm.f prospective, 38.2; 42.1.2.1;
 – independent, 20; 34.1; 35.2;
 – non-independent, 26;
 – preceded by *iw*, 32.1, remark 1;
 – preceded by *in*, 43.2.1.1.2;
 – preceded by *ir*, 33.2.1.2.2;
 – in purpose clauses, 26.2.
sdm.f ‘emphatic’, 15.1.1, remark; 23.6.
sdm.n.f, 15.1.1; 23.6.
sdm-hr.f, 17.6.

šzʿ.t.f sdm, 37.3.

šzʿ-ī.iri.t.f sdm, 37.3.

ky, 6.2.

gr, 7.4.2.

tʒ, 2.1.

tʒy, see *pʒy*.

tw.f (new direct object pronoun), 7.3.

twi, 7.4.1; 41.2.

tm, 11.1; 38.5;

- negation of the infinitive, 13.2;
 - negation of the verb of second tenses, 23.4.2;
 - negation of continuative forms, 25.1;
 - negation of the sequential, 25.2;
 - negation of the conjunctive, 25.3;
 - negation of the subordinate prospective in purpose clauses, 26.2.
- tnw*, 11.2.3; 43.4.1.

Coptic Index

ⲁⲛⲓ and Ⲙⲓⲙ., 7.4.1; 39.3.

ⲁⲛⲟⲕ and Ⲙⲓⲙ., 7.4.1; 39.3.

ⲄⲐⲟⲗ, 9, n. 48, p. 26.

Ⲑⲛ, 9, n. 46, p. 26.

Ⲡ̄, 11.1.

ⲘⲄⲘⲘⲟⲧⲠ̄, 17.1.

Ⲡ̄ⲠⲁⲧⲠ̄ⲘⲟⲧⲠ̄, 18.1.

Ⲡ̄ⲠⲠ̄ⲘⲟⲧⲠ̄, 15.1.2.1.

Ⲡ̄, 11.1.

Ⲡ̄...ⲁⲛ, 11.1.

ⲛⲁ, ⲛⲟϥ, 16.5.1

Ⲡ̄ⲧⲄⲧ̄Ⲡ̄, 39.2.1.2.

ⲧ̄Ⲡ̄, 11.1.

ⲟⲗⲁⲧⲄⲘⲟⲧⲠ̄, 37.3; 43.3.1.3.1.

ⲟⲗⲁⲘⲟⲧⲠ̄, 17.6.

Handwritten text in an ancient script, likely Old English or Old Norse, consisting of approximately 12 lines of text. The script is highly stylized and difficult to decipher. The text is written in black ink on a light-colored background. There are several lines of text that appear to be underlined or have a horizontal line drawn through them. The overall appearance is that of a manuscript page.

Index of sources cited¹

A		
Abydos Osireion, Hieratic ostraca n. 2 ...	44	
Amenemope		
27, 7	13	
8, 4-5	174	
C		
Cairo Stela JE 48876		
24	200	
26	198, 213	
D		
Dakhla Stela		
12	171	
7	170	
Doomed Prince		
4, 1	55, 173	
4, 3-6	109	
4, 5	224	
4, 6	140	
4, 6-7	145	
4, 7-8	136	
4, 8	124, 202	
4, 8-9	7, 171	
4, 12	229	
5, 10-11	96, 235	
6, 2-3	157	
6, 8-9	170, 232	
7, 2-3	167	
F		
First Hittite marriage		
30-31	145	
abridged version, 10	228	
G		
Giornale		
12, 4	125	
12, 4-5	202	
Graffito 1396, 3		203
Graffito of regnal year 34 of Ramses II		
3	43	
4	58	
Graffito of regnal year 47 of Ramses II		
1	45	
Graffito of regnal year 50 of Ramses II		
4	206	
H		
Hittite Treaty		
13	18	
15	17	
22	77	
30-31	126	
36	124	
Horus and Seth		
3, 12	85	
5, 2-3	110	
5, 12	230	
5, 13	231	
6, 14	199	
8, 5-6	224	
9, 11	203	
9, 7	212	
10, 5-6	135	
13, 12	214	
15, 12-13	94, 236	
16, 3	209, 229	
K		
KRI I		
128, 14	44	
238, 7	64	
238, 11-12	21	
238, 12	58, 86	
238, 14-15	61	
239, 4	59	

¹ The numbers refer to the pages in the book.

239, 4-5	223
239, 9-10	120
239, 13-15	231
239, 15	57, 67
240, 4	81
322, 6-7	172, 196
323, 4-5	197
409, 5-6	78
KRI II	
4, 8	241
28, 13	241
35, 1-5	226
36, 1-4	226
65, 1-4	76
97, 13	233
105, 2	57
105, 3-4	58
105, 7	241
108, 6-9	57
110, 3	169, 227
111, 2	65
115, 9-14	43
118, 8 and 9	65
227, 15	18
228, 3	17
229, 4	77
230, 8	241
230, 11-13	126
232, 1	124
240, 1-6	110
246, 1-7	145
257, 6	228
355, 4-5	202
355, 7	152
381, 10	62
381, 11-12	44
383, 9-10	172
383, 15-16	63
800, 9-10	11, 111
800, 11	60
801, 12	79
802, 1	122
802, 13-14	96
803, 16-804, 1	133
810, 1-2	118
810, 3	148
810, 3-4	108
895, 8-9	136

895, 11	76
910, 11-12	61
911, 1-2	67
KRI III	
148, 4-6	45
233, 1	156
233, 7-8	221
252, 6-7	143
255, 9-10	220
284, 1-3	181
395, 10-11	197
425, 4-5	167
427, 4-5	117, 206
427, 4-6	136
427, 7-8	223
427, 11-12	204
428, 8-9	172
428, 9-10	232
430, 13	173
431, 6-7	111
436, 8-9	43
436, 11	58, 176
437, 13-14	206
500, 6-9	183
500, 10-13	234
500, 14	207
504, 5-6	210
505, 3-4	52
505, 4	184
506, 12	184
532, 3-4	196, 209, 229
532, 6-7	66
533, 5	81
533, 7	177
533, 8	60
534, 9-11	143
535, 13-14	230
545, 3-5	187
549, 8-9	125, 198, 209
797, 11-12	143
KRI IV	
19, 3-4	241
19, 7	241
79, 8	206
79, 8-10	93
79, 12-13	120
80, 5-7	65
80, 16-81, 2	86

81, 1-2.....	51
81, 10-11.....	117
302, 15-303, 1.....	66
315, 10-11.....	147, 191
316, 2.....	115, 200
316, 13-14.....	172
316, 15.....	158
317, 9-10.....	77
317, 9-13.....	113
318, 3-6.....	223
319, 5.....	184
319, 8-9.....	48
319, 13-14.....	189
410, 4.....	190
410, 12-13.....	8
411, 9-10.....	241
411, 10.....	241
411, 11.....	124
413, 11-13.....	90
417, 6-8.....	108, 141
KRI v	
2, 2.....	84
2, 3.....	182
2, 3-4.....	64
350, 10.....	180
350, 16-351, 1.....	147
351, 6-7.....	117, 200
351, 7-8.....	121
352, 7-8.....	139
353, 13-15.....	120
355, 8-9.....	130
359, 14-16.....	117
360, 3.....	129
360, 3-4.....	54
436, 7.....	5
458, 1-3.....	80
467, 15-16.....	187, 228
467, 16.....	199
473, 11.....	83
473, 12.....	149
475, 2-3.....	9
477, 6-7.....	64
524, 7-8.....	183
525, 1-2.....	148
536, 5.....	134
542, 10-11.....	42
560, 3-5.....	60
560, 6-7.....	62

563, 4-5.....	144
565, 5-6.....	134
571, 1.....	200
572, 1-2.....	190
573, 15-16.....	96
575, 2-3.....	231
575, 15.....	200, 233
593, 7-8.....	125
595, 3-4.....	90
595, 4-6.....	153

KRI vi

20, 1-2.....	200
20, 4.....	198, 213
67, 15.....	13
68, 1-2.....	142
142, 11-13.....	236
155, 10-12.....	133
155, 12-13.....	71
155, 12-14.....	168
155, 14-156, 1.....	72
238, 2.....	127, 148
259, 13.....	45
265, 1.....	228
266, 1.....	4, 85, 113, 228
266, 3.....	71
266, 8.....	184
267, 7-8.....	5
268, 4.....	18
344, 16-345, 2.....	158
470, 3-4.....	64
470, 15-16.....	53
472, 1-2.....	14
474, 5-6.....	14
474, 8-9.....	59
475, 4-5.....	55, 139
476, 9.....	77
478, 1-2.....	208
479, 6-7.....	174
481, 4-5.....	16, 54
481, 4-6.....	121
483, 13-484, 1.....	139
484, 5-6.....	47, 138
487, 6.....	55
489, 9.....	15
490, 9-10.....	7
492, 13-15.....	130
492, 16-493, 1.....	130
493, 1-2.....	127

494, 7.....	11
502, 15.....	121
515, 10-11	154
515, 12-13	23
516, 2-4	112
517, 10.....	78
517, 12-13	18
519, 2-3	207
519, 4-5	117
520, 11.....	82
521, 8-9	126
564, 2 and 4.....	89
569, 3-4	125, 202
599, 9-11	93
671, 5.....	44
671, 7.....	58
672, 8.....	44
737, 3.....	178
738, 1-3	82
739, 7.....	189
739, 7-8	124
740, 1-2	65
740, 3-4	126
740, 5-7	61
740, 8-9	178
740, 11-13	134
740, 13-14	61
740, 16-741, 4	10
741, 7-8	78, 233
741, 8.....	189
741, 9-11	170
741, 10-11	206, 233
741, 13-15	134
757, 3-4	119
758, 2-3	142
758, 16-759, 1	79
760, 2-3	71
760, 3.....	18
767, 15-16	168
768, 12-14	231
768, 14-15	81, 83
769, 11-12	59
773, 8-9	13
774, 7-8	144, 233
774, 9.....	183
774, 9-10	198, 207
774, 12-14	187
775, 13-14	220

776, 13-14	77, 155
777, 13.....	94
777, 15-16	54
779, 14-15	229
780, 3.....	17
780, 9-10	197, 208
780, 12.....	179
780, 14-781, 1	135
781, 1-2	212
781, 3-5	173
781, 5.....	182
781, 6.....	12, 121, 208
782, 2.....	230
782, 11.....	84
782, 15-16	12
784, 4-8	52
785, 10.....	14
785, 16.....	213
787, 10-13	80
788, 5-6	227
789, 12.....	55
793, 4-8	145
793, 7-8	86
795, 14-15	234
796, 12-13	113
798, 14.....	171, 232
798, 16-799, 1	236
799, 2-3	203
800, 12.....	14, 17
800, 9-10	130
800, 13-15	158
803, 12-16	126
803, 16-804, 1	203
804, 9-11	129
805, 2-5	107
805, 8.....	241
806, 3.....	15
807, 11.....	208
807, 13.....	208
807, 6-7	57
808, 3.....	135
808, 13-14	187
808, 15-16	4
809, 16.....	47
810, 1-3	133
810, 13.....	59
810, 9.....	179
811, 3.....	199

811, 4-5.....	7
811, 14-15.....	205
814, 6-7.....	187
814, 12-13.....	65
816, 12-14.....	67
817, 14-15.....	211
818, 9-10.....	146
820, 11-12.....	148
821, 1-2.....	55
821, 2.....	229
821, 8-9.....	209
823, 12-13.....	7
832, 5-6.....	89, 136
833, 1-3.....	204
833, 3.....	85
834, 2-3.....	116
834, 4.....	201
835, 1.....	13
835, 7-8.....	94
KRI VII	
338, 14-15.....	153
339, 6-8.....	108
339, 7-8.....	126
339, 8-9.....	51, 83
339, 11.....	67
355, 6-7.....	168
376, 9-11.....	190
381, 8-9.....	125
384, 2-4.....	230
384, 3-4.....	51

Kuban Stela

9-10.....	202
11.....	152

L

LEM

2, 13-14.....	62
6, 5.....	178
9, 8-10.....	224
15, 2-3.....	185
17, 1-3.....	62
18, 1-3.....	71
29, 1-2.....	70
30, 16-31, 1.....	62
32, 6.....	241
35, 8.....	241

39, 10.....	177
41, 7-8.....	70
42, 12.....	210
42, 12-13.....	207
42, 14-16.....	75
46, 8.....	236
46, 8-9.....	233
46, 13-14.....	225
47, 8-9.....	241
53, 3.....	241
60, 9-10.....	194
61, 5.....	168
61, 12-13.....	88, 226
61, 14-15.....	89
63, 8-9.....	201
67, 7.....	234
67, 8.....	235
67, 15-16.....	74
71, 6-7.....	226
71, 11-12.....	189
71, 16.....	190
72, 2.....	198
74, 4.....	130
75, 1.....	125
75, 13-14.....	75
78, 11.....	205
80, 4-6.....	179
84, 17-85, 2.....	71
86, 2.....	157
100, 12-13.....	183
101, 11-12.....	156

LES

1, 1.....	173
1, 1-2.....	55
1, 5-10.....	109
2, 1-2.....	145
2, 2-3.....	136
2, 4-5.....	124, 171, 202
2, 5.....	7
2, 12.....	229
3, 15-16.....	96, 235
4, 9-10.....	157
5, 3-5.....	170
5, 4-5.....	232
10, 15-16.....	48
11, 1-2.....	149
12, 8.....	88

13, 5-6	148
14, 1-2	201, 233
14, 6.....	10
15, 1.....	14
15, 12-13	202
16, 12-13	226
19, 16.....	242
19, 16-20, 1	143
23, 6-7	146
25, 10.....	169, 232
25, 10-11	175
26, 10-11	141
32, 6.....	48
32, 14.....	232
32, 16-33, 1	232
33, 2.....	235
33, 3-4	178
41, 2-3	85
42, 16-43, 1	110
43, 15.....	230
44, 1.....	231
45, 11-12	199
47, 14-15	224
49, 10-11	212
50, 2.....	203
50, 14-15	135
55, 13-14	214
59, 5-8	236
59, 6.....	94
59, 15.....	209, 229
61, 5.....	9
61, 10.....	241
62, 3-4	125
62, 4-5	64
62, 5.....	176
62, 10.....	241
62, 13-14	201
62, 13-15	156
62, 15-16	159
62, 16-63, 1	116
62, 16-63, 2	190
63, 4-5	53
65, 1.....	21
65, 11-12	127
65, 13.....	221
66, 7.....	234
66, 16-67, 2	234
67, 9-10	231

68, 3-4	180
68, 6-7	210
68, 7-8	168, 176
68, 15-69, 4	93
69, 5-6	213
69, 7-8	188
69, 12-13	58
69, 14-15	61
69, 15-16	77, 155
70, 1-3	181
70, 4-5	168
70, 16-71, 1	116
72, 7-8	125
72, 8-9	87
73, 16-74, 1	230
74, 1-2	221
74, 10-11	227
74, 14.....	85
75, 1.....	8
75, 4-5	124
75, 7-9	95
75, 12.....	169

LRL

1, 7.....	235
2, 1.....	176
2, 2.....	81s
2, 8.....	59
4, 6.....	5
7, 11-13	138
8, 7-8	86
10, 8-9	88
12, 6-7	197
15, 9.....	206
16, 8-9	170
17, 10-12	108
17, 14-15	219
17, 16.....	127
19, 15-16	16
20, 4-5	21
20, 14-15	147
21, 11-13	151
22, 14-15	191
23, 11.....	58
24, 4-5	136
28, 4-5	114
28, 8-9	16
30, 8-9	45, 71

32, 4	185
34, 14	81
35, 13	6
35, 15	63
36, 11	173
40, 6	82
42, 2-6	146
43, 4	172
45, 5-6	81
46, 4-5	224
46, 10	221
46, 10-11	63
46, 11	205
48, 16	4
50, 16-51, 2	154
50, 16-51, 3	111
55, 12-13	151
64, 9-10	82
64, 14-15	210
66, 13	209
67, 16-68, 1	222
68, 1-2	179
68, 4-5	204
68, 9-10	144
70, 14-15	205
73, 1	171
73, 7	53, 219

M

Mès

N 2	167
N 10	117, 136, 206
N 11	223
N 11-12	204
N 15	172, 232
N 31	173
N 35	111

N

P. Naunakht I, (P. Ashmolean Museum 1945.95), 2, 7.....148

O

O. Ashmolean 1945-37 + 1945-33
13-14.....62

O. Ashmolean 1945-37
15.....44

O. Berlin P 1121, v° 1-2.....148

O. Berlin P 10627
3-6.....133
5-7.....168
6-8.....71
9-11.....72

O. Berlin P 10630
6-7.....134

O. Berlin P 10655
5-7.....96

O. Berlin P 11239
3-4.....187

O. Berlin P 11247
v° 181
v° 5.....177
v° 760

O. Berlin P 12630
6.....90

v° 1-2.....153

O. Berlin P 12654
10-11.....158

O. BM 5631
12.....179

O. Brussels E 317.....218

O. Brussels E 305
v° 2-4.....153

O. Cairo 25530, 1-3.....42

O. Cairo 25556
4-5.....66

O. Cairo 25589
2.....5

O. Cairo 25725
1-3.....108, 141

O. Clère.....218

O. DM 67, 3-5.....134

O. DM 108, 4-5.....78

O. DM 126
3.....196, 209, 229
5-6.....66

O. DM 303, 3-4.....143

O. DM 321 , 1	227
O. DM 328 , 8-10	230
O. DM 357 , a, 3	200, 225
O. DM 364 , 2-3	9
O. DM 437 , 1-3	173
O. DM 439	
1	178
1-3	180
O. DM 446	
2-3	172
8-9	84
v° 6-7	63
O. DM 552	
verso	224
v° 1-2	44
O. DM 554	
1-2	228
5	225
5-6	185
6	67, 198
v° 3-4	54
v° 5	4
O. DM 563 , 4	84
O. DM 575	219
O. DM 580 , 4-5	231
O. DM 582 , 5-6	200, 233
O. DM 587 , 5-6	5
O. DM 592 , 6-7	125
O. DM 607 , 2	60
O. DM 608 , v° 1	223
O. A. Gardiner 90 , 7	200
O. Gardiner 4 , v° 4-6	236
O. Gardiner 54	
5	83
r° 6	149
O. Gardiner 55	
v° 1-3	180
v° 4	147
v° 4-6	79
O. Gardiner 103 A , 9-10	190
O. Gardiner 143 , 5-6	190
O. Gardiner 165 , v° 4-5	125, 198, 209
O. Gardiner 273 , 6	168
O. Gardiner 310 , 2-5	143
O. Gardiner (no number)	221
O. IFAO 501	222

O. IFAO 557	219
O. IFAO 599	220
O. IFAO 682	184, 222
O. IFAO 691	220
O. IFAO 693	220
O. IFAO 848	219
O. IFAO 849	220
O. IFAO 851	219
O. IFAO 857	222
O. IFAO 861	207
O. IFAO 862	222
O. IFAO 864	220
O. IFAO 870	222
O. IFAO 884	221
O. IFAO 999	222
O. IFAO 1007	221
O. IFAO 1296 , 7	67

O. Leipzig 2

4-6	228
5-6	187
v° 1	199

O. Leipzig 16

6-7	196
v° 2-3	225

O. Mond 175, 1-2 125 |

O. Nash 1

2-3	147, 191
8	115, 200
v° 1-3	172
v° 4	158
v° 12	77
v° 12-16	113

O. Nash 2

5-8	223
v° 4-5	184
v° 8-9	48
v° 14	189

O. OIC 16991

11- v° 3	60
v° 4-7	62

O. Petrie 14, 6-7 183 |

O. Petrie 60, 1-v° 2 111 |

O. Petrie 61, 7- v° 3 78 |

O. Prague 1826, 6-7 88 |

O. Turin 57093 , v° 4.....	74
O. Turin 57173 , 3-5.....	80
O. Turin 57472 , v° 6-7.....	188

O. UCL 19614

4.....	84
5.....	182
5-6.....	64

O. Vienna 9 , v° 1-2.....	144
----------------------------------	-----

P

P. Abbott

2, 15.....	53
2, 7.....	64
3, 10.....	14
4, 14.....	14
4, 16.....	59
5, 18.....	77
5, 5-6.....	55, 139
6, 8-9.....	208
6, 20-21.....	174
7, 13-14.....	16, 54
7, 14.....	121

P. Adoption (P. Ashmolean Museum 1945.96)

21.....	178
v° 6-7.....	82

P. Anastasi I

10, 3-4.....	169
14, 1-2.....	206
27, 8.....	235

P. Anastasi II

5, 3.....	185
7, 6-7.....	62
9, 3-4.....	71

P. Anastasi III

7, 8.....	70
v° 3, 2-3.....	62

P. Anastasi IV

5, 1.....	177
6, 9.....	70
7, 10-11.....	210
7, 11.....	207
8, 1-2.....	75

10, 11.....	236
10, 11-12.....	233
11, 3-4.....	225

P. Anastasi V

9, 6-7.....	194
10, 9.....	168
11, 6.....	89
11, 4-5.....	88, 226
14, 1-2.....	201
20, 4.....	234
20, 5.....	235
21, 2-3.....	74
26, 3-4.....	226
26, 7-27, 1.....	189
27, 3-4.....	190
27, 5.....	198

P. Anastasi VI

21-22.....	130
32.....	125
42.....	75
85-86.....	205

P. Anastasi VIII

1, 6-8.....	183
1, 9-11.....	234
1, 11-12.....	207
v° 4-5.....	210

P. Anastasi IX

1-2.....	52
2.....	184
11.....	184

P. Ashmolean Museum 1945.95

2, 7.....	127, 148
-----------	----------

P. Ashmolean Museum 1945.96

21.....	178
v° 6-7.....	82

P. Banks I

16-17.....	178
v° 2.....	170

P. Berlin P 3047 , 10.....	133
-----------------------------------	-----

P. Berlin P 8523

5-6.....	93, 135
8-11.....	85
11-16.....	151

P. Berlin 10487 , 9-v° 1.....	173
--------------------------------------	-----

P. Berlin 10494

6.....	58
v° 2-3.....	136
P. Berlin P 10496, 12-13.....	64

P. BM 10052

1, 8.....	168
1, 16-17.....	231
1, 17.....	81, 83
2, 1.....	59
3, 7-8.....	13
3, 16-17.....	144, 233
3, 18.....	183, 198, 207
3, 20-1.....	187
4, 2.....	220
4, 11-12.....	77, 155
4, 21.....	94
4, 22.....	54
5, 9-10.....	229
5, 12.....	17
5, 15-16.....	197, 208
5, 17.....	179
5, 18-19.....	135
5, 20.....	212
5, 21-22.....	173
5, 22.....	182
5, 23.....	12, 121, 208
6, 3-4.....	230
6, 9.....	84
6, 12-13.....	12
7, 5-7.....	52
8, 1.....	14
8, 5.....	213
8, 21-22.....	80
v° 9, 2-3.....	227
10, 9.....	55
12, 2-5.....	145
12, 5.....	86
13, 7-8.....	234
13, 17-18.....	113
14, 14.....	171
14, 14-15.....	232
14, 16-17.....	236
14, 18.....	203
15, 5-6.....	130
15, 7.....	14, 17
15, 8-9.....	158

P. BM 10053

2, 9-10.....	119
v° 2, 16.....	142
v° 3, 5.....	79
v° 3, 12.....	18, 71

P. BM 10054

2, 8-9.....	130
2, 10.....	130
2, 10-11.....	127
3, 6.....	11
v° 1, 6.....	7

P. BM 10068, 4, 22.....**P. BM 10083, 2, 5.....****P. BM 10100**

14-15.....	154
14- v° 1.....	111

P. BM 10284, 7.....**P. BM 10326**

5-8.....	108
8-9.....	219
9-10.....	127
v° 10-11.....	16
v° 14.....	21
v° 21.....	147

P. BM 10375

13-14.....	81
23.....	224
26.....	63, 221
26-27.....	205

P. BM 10383

1, 5.....	116
1, 6.....	201
2, 2.....	13

P. BM 10403

3, 14-15.....	89, 136
3, 25-27.....	204
3, 27.....	85

P. BM 10412, 8-9.....**P. BM 10417**

v° 3.....	114
v° 6-7.....	16

P. BN 196, II, 7-9.....**P. BN 197**

II, 6- v° 1.....	191
III, v° 3.....	81
V, 3.....	6
V, v° 2, 3.....	63

VI, 7-8.....	82	P. DM v	
VI, v° 4-5	210	2	4, 228
P. BN 198		2-3.....	85, 113
I, 14.....	209	4.....	71
II, 10-11	222	v° 3.....	184
II, 11	179	P. DM VI, v° 2-3.....	5
II, v° 1-2.....	204	P. DM VII	
II, v° 6-7.....	144	1	5
P. BN 199, III, 6-7.....	205	v° 6	95
P. Bologna 1086		P. DM VIII	
6.....	206	1	44
6-7.....	93	3	58
9.....	120	P. DM IX, 3.....	44
14-15.....	65	P. DM XVI, v° 1.....	18
20-21.....	51, 86	P. DM XVIII	
26.....	117	5-6.....	230
P. Bologna 1094		6.....	51
2, 4-5.....	62	P. DM XXVIII	
6, 5.....	178	10-11.....	17
10, 1-2.....	224	9-10.....	8
P. Cairo 58053, 3	196	P. ESP, A	
P. Cairo 58054, 3	197	7.....	78
P. Cairo 58056, 8.....	220	9-10.....	18
P. Cairo 58057		P. ESP, B	
3.....	64	13.....	203
6.....	21	15-16.....	117
6-7.....	86	P. ESP, C	
7.....	58	16.....	82
8.....	61	29-30.....	126
P. Cairo 58059, 5-6.....	143	P. Gardiner 4	
P. Cairo 58083, r° 3.....	172	4-5.....	108, 126
P. Cairo J 65739		5-6.....	51, 83
4-5.....	111	v° 1.....	67
5.....	11	P. Geneva D 187, v° 1-4.....	146
6.....	60	P. Geneva D 407	
17.....	79	v° 18	170
19.....	122	v° 6	206
27.....	96	P. Griffith, 5-6.....	197
P. Chester Beatty I, 17, 1 and v° G, 2, 5 ...	199	P. Gurob	
P. Chester Beatty V, v° 5, 1.....	13	2, 1-2.....	76
P. Chester Beatty VII, v° 1, 7.....	96	2, 3-4.....	127
P. DM II, 1.....	45	2, 6-8.....	112
P. DM IV, 5.....	171, 228		

P. Lansing, 2

2-3	183
8-9	156

P. Leiden I

350, VI, 9.....	72
350, v ^o col. III, 1, 13.....	148
350, v ^o , col. III, 11-12.....	118
350, v ^o , col. III, 13-14.....	108
365, 6-7.....	156
365, v ^o 3-4.....	221
366, 2-3.....	61
366, 7.....	67
368, 11.....	76
368, 8-9.....	136
369, 5.....	235
369, 8-9.....	176
369, 9.....	81
369, v ^o 4.....	59
370, 18.....	88
371, 2-3.....	180

P. Leopold-Amherst

2, 5-6.....	139
2, 9-10.....	47, 138
3, 16.....	55
4, 12.....	15

P. Louvre E 27151

7-11.....	154
8.....	17
8-9.....	201

P. Mallet

VI, 4.....	13
VI, 6.....	142

P. Mayer A

1, 1-4.....	126
1, 4.....	203
1, 9-10.....	129
1, 14-16.....	107
1, 23.....	15
2, 12.....	57
2, 14.....	208
2, 16.....	208
2, 19.....	135
3, 4-5.....	187

3, 6.....	4
3, 17.....	47
3, 18-19.....	133
3, 23.....	179
3, 28.....	59
4, 3.....	199
4, 4.....	7
4, 10.....	205
5, 14.....	187
5, 18-19.....	65
6, 21-22.....	67
8, 5.....	211
8, 13-14.....	146
9, 6-7.....	148
9, 11.....	229
9, 15-16.....	209
10, 22-3.....	7
v ^o 9, 10-11.....	55

P. Mayer B

4-5.....	154
5-6.....	23
8-9.....	112

P. Nevill, v^o 3-4.....

.....	74
-------	----

P. Northumberland I

2.....	59
2-3.....	223
7-8.....	120
11- v ^o 1.....	231
v ^o 1.....	57, 67
v ^o 3-8.....	110
v ^o 6.....	100

P. Orbiney

2, 1-2.....	48
2, 2.....	149
3, 5-6.....	88
4, 3-4.....	148
4, 10.....	201
5, 2.....	10
5, 8.....	14
6, 5.....	202
7, 5-6.....	226
10, 3.....	143
13, 6-7.....	146
15, 9.....	169, 175, 232
16, 8.....	141

P. Phillipps , v° 6-7.....	45, 71	1, 10-11.....	134
P. Pushkin 127 , 4, 12-13.....	47	1, 12-13.....	156
P. Sallier I		1, 13.....	45, 137
4, 1-2.....	179	v° 1, 5.....	18
7, 6-7.....	71	v° 1, 10.....	109
8, 3-4.....	157	v° 2, 10.....	89
P. Salt 124		v° 3-7.....	61
1, 17.....	190	P. Turin 1971 , 13.....	185
2, 1.....	8	P. Turin 1972	
2, 9-10.....	124	4.....	86
v° 1, 9-10.....	90	4-6.....	138
P. Smith 8 , 15-16.....	152	P. Turin 1973 , v° 5.....	5
P. Strasburg 39		P. Turin 1974 + 1945 , v° 7.....	82
8-9.....	189	P. Turin 1976 , v° 1-6.....	93
v° 2-3.....	189	P. Turin 1977	
v° 3-6.....	144	4-6.....	84
P. Turin 1875		5-6.....	129
1, 9.....	180	9.....	184
2, 5.....	147	P. Turin 1978/208 , v° 1-2... 116, 194, 204	
3, 1.....	117, 200	P. Turin 1979 , v° 1-2.....	172
3, 2.....	121	P. Turin 2009 + 1999 , v° 1, 9 and 10... 89	
4, 2.....	139	P. Turin 2021 , 2, 2.....	124, 189
4, 6.....	120	2, 8-9.....	65
4, 12.....	130	2, 10.....	126
6, 1.....	117	2, 11-12.....	61
6, 2.....	54, 129	3, 1.....	178
P. Turin 1880		3, 3-4.....	134
1, 1.....	43	3, 4.....	61
1, 5.....	43	3, 6-8.....	10
2, 2-3.....	89	3, 10.....	78, 189, 233
2, 17.....	54, 141	3, 11-12.....	170, 206, 233
2, 18-19.....	113	3, 13-14, 1.....	134
2, 20.....	95, 224	P. Turin 2026	
3, 15.....	133	18.....	171
3, 2.....	225	v° 1.....	53
3, 4-5.....	76	v° 2.....	219
3, 9-11.....	142	P. Turin A	
4, 1-2.....	176	v° 1, 6-7.....	73
v° 6, 4-5.....	13, 96	v° 4, 1.....	202
v° 7, 7.....	208	v° 4, 10.....	213
P. Turin 1887		P. Valençay I , v° 6-7.....	17
1, 9.....	209	Pentawer poem	
		95.....	226
		98.....	226
		202.....	72

330.....233

Q

Qadesh Bulletin

12.....57
14.....58
27.....57
35.....169, 227
40.....65
65-67.....43
78-79.....65

R

RAD

14, 5-6.....76
14, 7-9.....127
14, 11-15, 2.....112
48, 11-12.....96
48, 12.....13
52, 2-3.....208
52, 14-15.....43
53, 2-3.....43
53, 15-54, 1.....89
55, 13-14.....54, 141
55, 15-16.....113
56, 1-2.....224
56, 2-3.....95
56, 4.....225
56, 6-7.....76
56, 11-14.....142
57, 2-3.....133
57, 6-7.....176
73, 6-7.....17
75, 4-5.....208
75, 7-8.....134
75, 10-11.....156
75, 12.....137
75, 12-13.....45
78, 12-13.....18
79, 7-8.....109
80, 16.....89
82, 3.....61

T

Tablet Neskhons, 18-19.....211

Theban tomb

n. 157.....181
n. 19.....197

Truth and Falsehood

4, 5.....48
5, 3.....232
5, 5.....232
5, 6.....235
5, 7.....178

U

URK

IV, 775, 16.....242
VI, 137, 8.....211

W

Wenamun

1, 2.....42
1, 4.....9
1, 12-13.....125
1, 13.....64, 176
1, 18.....201
1, 18-19.....156
1, 19-20.....159
1, 20.....116
1, 20-21.....190
1, 22.....53
1, 37-38.....21
1, 43-45.....127
1, 44-45.....221
1, 50-51.....234
1, 56-57.....234
2, 3.....231
2, 10.....180
2, 11-12.....210
2, 12-13.....89
2, 13.....168
2, 19-22.....93
2, 23.....213
2, 24.....188
2, 27-28.....58
2, 28-29.....61
2, 29-30.....77, 155
2, 30-31.....181
2, 32.....168
2, 38-39.....116

2, 52-53.....	125
2, 53.....	87
2, 66.....	230
2, 66-67.....	221
2, 71.....	227

2, 73.....	85
2, 75.....	8
2, 77.....	124
2, 78-79.....	95
2, 81.....	169

List of figures

O. Berlin P 11247, HP Berlin, III, Taf. 35	
v° 1	82
v° 5	177
v° 7	60
O. Bruxelles E 317, <i>BIFAO</i> 72, pl. XVI 12.....	12
O. Clere, <i>id</i> , pl. XV	219
O. DM 552, v°, <i>Doc. de feuilles</i> , V1, pl. 2a.....	45
O. DM 554, r°, <i>id</i> , pl. 3a.....	87
O. DM 554, v°, <i>id</i> , pl. 3a.....	103
O. DM 563, <i>id</i> , pl. 8a	128
O. DM 575, <i>id</i> , pl. 12a	149
O. DM 582, <i>id</i> , pl. 17a	242
O. DM 592, <i>id</i> , pl. 22a	122
O. Gardiner, <i>id</i> , pl. XVI	221
O. IFAO 501, <i>BIFAO</i> 35, pl. I.....	223
O. IFAO 557, <i>id</i> , pl. II.....	237
O. IFAO 599, <i>id</i> , pl. II.....	237
O. IFAO 682, <i>BIFAO</i> 41, pl. II	222
O. IFAO 691, <i>id</i> , pl. I	220
O. IFAO 848, <i>id</i> , pl. I	219
O. IFAO 849, <i>id</i> , pl. I	220
O. IFAO 861, <i>BIFAO</i> 72, pl. XVII.....	207
O. Leipzig 2, <i>HO</i> , pl. 34, 4	188
O. Leipzig 2, v°, <i>id</i> , pl. 34, 4.....	199
P. Abbott, <i>Select Papyri in the Hieratic character from the Collection of the British Museum</i> , IInd series, 1860, pl. I-VII	
1	50
2	98
3	104
4	106
5	217
6	239
7	245
P. Adoption, r° II, 15-26, <i>JEA</i> 26, pl. VI 34.....	32
v° II, 1-13, <i>id</i> , pl. VII	40
P. Cairo, J 65739, 1-14, <i>JEA</i> 21, pl. XIV	2
P. Cairo J 65739, 14-28, <i>id</i> , pl. XVI.....	164
P. Northumberland I	
1, <i>JEA</i> 34, pl. IX.....	249
2, <i>id</i> , pl. IX	42
7-8, <i>id</i> , pl. IX.....	120
11- v° 1, <i>id</i> , pl. IX-X	230
v° 1, <i>id</i> , pl. X.....	57
v° 3-8, <i>id</i> , pl. X.....	38
v° 6, <i>id</i> , pl. X.....	82
P. Valençay I, v°, <i>RdE</i> 6, 17.....	30



Caning of Hittite scouts taken prisoner at the Battle of Qadesh:



p3 iy ir.n p3 h3pitw n pr-3 3.w...s. iw in.f h3pitw 2 n p3 hrw n ht3 m-b3h pr-3 3.w.s. iw.tw (hr) qnqn.sn m-b3h r dit dd.sn p3 nty p3 hrw n ht3 im.

‘The arrival of (*lit.* ‘the coming he has done’) the scout of Pharaoh l.p.h. leading two scouts of the Hittite enemy in the presence of Pharaoh l.p.h.. They were beaten in the presence (of Pharaoh) to make them confess (*lit.* ‘to cause that they said’) where the Hittite enemy was.’

Great Temple of Abu Simbel, north wall of the hypostyle hall, after DestochesNoblecourt, Donadoni and Edel, ‘La Bataille de Qadesh,’ Cairo, 1971.